

# 雪鹰领主

书著

我吃西红柿

我吃西红柿



1. [Chapter 1 – Traces](#)
2. [Chapter 2 – Relocating family](#)
3. [Chapter 3 – One Year's Time](#)
4. [Chapter 4 – Discussions amongst Transcendents](#)
5. [Chapter 5 – Intelligence on Demons](#)
6. [Chapter 6 – Hundred-Battles Chamber Combat](#)
7. [Chapter 7 – Requiring External Assistance](#)
8. [Chapter 8 – Becoming a Saint!](#)
9. [Chapter 9 – Leaving Xia Capital](#)
10. [Chapter 10 – Demigod Treasures](#)
11. [Chapter 11 – Hometown](#)
12. [Chapter 12 – Meeting Kong You Yue Coincidentally](#)
13. [Chapter 13 – A Familiar Back](#)
14. [Chapter 14 – A Few Coins](#)
15. [Chapter 15 – Big Fish \(I\)](#)
16. [Chapter 16 – Big Fish \(II\)](#)
17. [Chapter 17 – A Great Disaster](#)
18. [Chapter 18 – Demon Transformation](#)
19. [Chapter 19 – The Arrival of the Demonic God](#)
20. [Chapter 20 – The Failure in Negotiation](#)
21. [Chapter 21 – Discovery of the Demon](#)
22. [Chapter 22 – Close-Quarter Combat! Suppression!](#)
23. [Chapter 23 – The Dust Has Settled](#)
24. [Chapter 24 – What is This?](#)
25. [Chapter 25 – General](#)
26. [Chapter 26 – The Devil's Well](#)
27. [Chapter 27 – Fury](#)
28. [Chapter 28 – Northern Land](#)
29. [Chapter 29 – Acceptance](#)
30. [Chapter 30 – The Star](#)
31. [Chapter 31 – Undercurrent](#)
32. [Chapter 32 – Conquer](#)
33. [Chapter 33 – Cheng Ling Shu](#)
34. [Chapter 34 – Dream On!](#)

35. [Chapter 35 – Indivisible](#)
36. [Chapter 36 – Attacking the Minor Transcendent World](#)
37. [Chapter 37 – Unexpected Gains!](#)
38. [Chapter 38 – I Can Wait](#)
39. [Chapter 39 – That Fateful Day... Has Arrived!](#)
40. [Chapter 40 – I Need a Half Year's Time](#)
41. [Chapter 41 – A Bitter Encounter](#)
42. [Chapter 42 – Clan Protection Treasure?](#)
43. [Chapter 43 – Flicking His Fingers](#)
44. [Chapter 44 – Mission begins!](#)
45. [Chapter 45 – The Palace of the Demons](#)
46. [Chapter 46 – Kill!](#)
47. [Chapter 47 – This is Extreme Piercing \(I\)](#)
48. [Chapter 48 – This is Extreme Piercing \(II\)](#)
49. [Chapter 49 – The Joy of Success](#)
50. [Chapter 50 – Temporal Temple](#)
51. [Chapter 51 – Teaming Up](#)
52. [Chapter 52 – Attack!](#)
53. [Chapter 53 – Shocking! \(I\)](#)
54. [Chapter 54 – Shocking! \(II\)](#)
55. [Chapter 55 – Battle](#)
56. [Chapter 56 – The Second Plan](#)
57. [Chapter 57 – Fantasy?](#)
58. [Chapter 58 – True Meaning of Mirage](#)
59. [Chapter 59 – No Survivors](#)
60. [Chapter 60 – I Disagree](#)
61. [Publisher:](#)
  1. [TooLate](#)
    1. [From doswap](#)

# Chapter 1 – Traces

---

Winter.

A thick layer of snow had long piled up around the Xia Capital, whilst the winter air pervaded the world. On the third floor of an elegant restaurant it felt quite warm and comfortable.

Good wine was kept warm.

Xue Ying and Jing Qiu sat facing each other, drinking the delicious fruity wine while chatting. Even though there were other guests on the third floor, they were seated quite far from them. Although Transcendents were, more or less, friendly with each other, they valued privacy, hence they would often just give each other a nod as a greeting and would not disturb other Transcendents. Xue Ying and Jing Qiu clearly enjoyed this type of environment.

“Jing Qiu, after the Faction Head thoroughly examined your progress yesterday, your ranking jumped to fourth,” Xue Ying praised. “Even though they say that Transcendent mages improve much slower, from what I see, your improvement is quite fast.”

Jing Qiu gave a beautiful smile, took a sip of her wine and replied with a tilt of her mouth, “What, you are already ranked first, but you aren’t allowing others to improve by a bit?”

“That’s not what I meant,” Xue Ying added hurriedly.

“I’m just joking with you! Honestly, ever since you became number one, I feel more perceptive in my investigations. For some reason, when I study the spell models, I’m able to understand the contents after only a moment, and after that, I make a breakthrough.” Jing Qiu laughed. “Cultivating with such a pleasant mood is really comfortable. Actually, earlier on, I thought that they treated you

unfairly. And now, I was proven right!”

“You ah, you’re too focused on these things.” Xue Ying shook his head.

“Hmph. Before, when I heard the Faction Head reprimanding you, I already felt quite unhappy,” Jing Qiu shook her head, before her eyes brightened. “Oh right, this time, you slapped his face quite harshly. What did he look like when you saw him after you completed the Mountain Road mission? Was his expression really awkward?”

“It’s not what you think it is! Actually, Faction Head Si Kong has quite a large heart. Previously, he was very worried that I was walking down the wrong path, and only because of his concern for me did he reprimand me so harshly,” Xue Ying answered.

The two of them chatted together. A layer of World Energy formed a privacy shield over them.

When Transcendents were chatting, nobody would eavesdrop deliberately. After all, it would be really impudent for one to do so.

Suddenly—

Three Transcendents sitting on the table beside them had a huge change in their expressions. One of them even stood up, overturning a flask of wine and spilling its contents to the floor. One of the waiters came rushing over.

“Mn?” Xue Ying and Jing Qiu, along with the Transcendents on the other tables looked over with confused expressions.

“What happened to them?” Jing Qiu asked, surprised. “Being Transcendents, how can one lose their state of calm to the extent of overturning the flask of wine!”

“Look at how shocked the three of them are, I think something huge must have happened that is related to them.” Xue Ying calmly sipped from his cup of wine.

“Fellow Transcendents.”

One of the three Transcendents, who was a relatively imposing male with a disheveled hairstyle, swept his gaze towards the other two tables and shouted

out, “Brother Dong Bo, Brother Wei An, do you know of the matter regarding the demons?”

“What happened?” Xue Ying, Jin Qiu and the other Transcendents were extremely curious.

The imposing male, Rong Jun, was a Saint realm Transcendent and was relatively famous in the Xia Capital.

“It seems that our fellow Transcendents do not know what happened yet” Rong Jun continued. “I just received news stating that my Can Gan County in the Eastfields Province... has just been entirely annihilated!”

“What!”

Xue Ying, Jin Qiu and the other two Transcendents at the other table were so shocked that they stood up instantaneously.

A county had just been annihilated?

Since counties were usually relatively well established and long-lived, their defences would be quite impressive. At the same time, ordinarily there would be more than ten million people living within a county. Now a county had been annihilated? That was devastating news! Transcendents would not dare to do such a thing, including those from the Beast Clan, unless the two races were at war.

Doing such a thing would definitely infuriate the entire Xia Clan, and the Xia Clan would use their full strength to take vengeance against the perpetrators.

“How is this possible? Who would dare to do it?” Xue Ying hurriedly asked, “Brother Rong Jun, did you just mention something about demons? Were the demons at fault? But how long has it been since Abyss Demons have previously appeared? And even if there were some demons left alive within the world, I doubt they would dare to do such a thing.”

“That’s right, brother Rong Jun, I’ve heard that even though some Abyss Demons are hiding and staying dormant, they are all extremely prudent and would never dare to risk going out in the open.” The other Transcendent, Wei An, could not help but say.

“I’m not clear on what exactly happened either.”

Rong Jun added, “But what I can confirm is that there was an extremely powerful demon who dared to slaughter the people in my county. In the end, after our Xia Clan’s Demigod reached the location, they began a big battle! The aftershock of this battle was extremely huge, and that demon’s aura was so earthshaking that many people located in the distant area could feel a terrifying and destructive dark aura. As for the details of the battle, that is something I’m unclear of. However, some of the men from our county followed the aftershock to investigate what happened. When they reached the location, they discovered that the entire county silent, and many corpses lay there. Although they were all dead, the corpses did not have any visible injuries.”

“No wounds?” Xue Ying’s expression drastically changed.

Causing the entire county’s population of more than ten million people to die without having any visible injuries was frightening for anyone hearing it. Some Demigods might have the capabilities to do such a thing, but they would not dare to do it either!

“What exactly happened?” Jing Qiu could not help but ask. “Why did such powerful demons appear? Our Xia Clan’s Demigods have been lording over the various locations, so how could the annihilation of an entire county happen?”

“Let’s ask big brother Eternal Wind,” Jing Qiu added.

“Mn, I guess he should know more.” Xue Ying immediately sent a message with his communication wristband to Chi Qiu Bai.

.....

It wasn’t just Xue Ying and those with him.

Currently, the entire Xia Capital’s Transcendents had received various news from their hometown. After all, these Transcendents would still communicate with those from their hometown.

There were different types of news.

Like how there had been an earthshaking battle that created huge aftershocks.

Or that there were some Abyss Demons who had been slaughtered by some

powerful Transcendents after the demons massacred the populace!

But matters like the annihilation of an entire county was really rare. After all, the defensive capabilities of a county was relatively strong, and its area of protection was huge – the area for the population of ten million people. Wanting to exterminate an entire population of 10 million of people within a short period of time... could only be achieved by the strongest of demons.

“What exactly happened?”

“Why would there be so many traces of demons?”

“Why are there no words from the Demigod elders?”

Xia Capital’s Transcendents were exchanging these messages.

These Transcendents knew too little. At most, their assumptions were just conclusions drawn from clues pieced together from everywhere.

Within the highest floor of a certain restaurant.

The entire top floor had been booked. Transcendents from the Tranquil Sun Province were currently gathered at this location, and they all felt uneasy. They gathered not because of any special occasion. Several Transcendents like Hai Ru Zhen and Peng Shan were currently at their hometown.

“Fellow Transcendents, stay calm,” Xue Ying said. Right now, since Chi Qiu Bai and Peng Shan were not around, he was currently their temporary leader. “Big brother Eternal Wind has sent a message for us to stay calm and wait. I believe that there will be news coming from him soon.”

“We also don’t know what exactly happened.”

“I guess it should be an invasion by the demons, though the scale of their invasion is unknown as of now.”

“Ai.”

These Transcendents all felt really uneasy.

From the information they had gathered, demons had appeared all over Dragon Mountain Empire, and all those battles were extremely fierce. Clearly, it was the Demigod overlords who were currently moving to all the various



locations, especially so with their huge combat power and their ease of shuttling through space.

---

## Chapter 2 – Relocating family

---

Although all the Transcendents were really anxious, they still waited patiently, because they knew that the Demigod overlords were trying their hardest to defend the various territories of the Xia Clan.

“I never would have thought that a demon invasion would happen in our era!” Yuan Qing couldn’t believe it, he felt confused and had mixed emotions regarding the situation .

“Since ancient times, our Xia Clan often had demon invasions,” explained Xue Ying. “The Dark Abyss is where darkness, destruction, and negativity gather. It can connect with numerous material planes and worlds. Occasionally, when there’s a spatial fluctuation, the Dark Abyss can establish a connection with our Xia Clan world for a short period of time. I don’t know how long this fluctuation lasts, though.”

“Mn,” Cheng Ling Shu was also worried. “From the information we have received so far, the invasion this time is quite severe.”

Demon invasions also have degrees in severity.

In Xia Clan’s history, the largest demon invasion involved 300 demon Demigods, not including other lower ranked demons. The Xia Clan’s humankind and beasts faced extinction, leaving only a small number who took refuge in the Infernal Realm. Even the Infernal Realm was attacked by the demons while humankind could only fend for themselves.

The events of that time were really tragic!

As time passed by, some of the demons left whilst others gradually died due to old age, reducing their numbers. After all, it was really difficult for demons to multiply or have offspring in the human world. But humankind didn’t have that

same difficulty, so gradually the situation reversed, enabling humankind to overcome the situation and go back to their hometowns. But that story was from 90,000 years ago.

Of course, in the long history of Xia Clan, this kind of severe demon invasion only happened twice. One time was the long battle from 90,000 years ago and the second time was 30,000 years ago.

As for the other demon invasions...

Most of these invasions were smaller in scale. Only a handful of demons were lucky enough to find and pass through inconspicuous space cracks and posed no threat to the Xia Clan.

“With what we know, in the short period of time since these demons have arrived, the prefecture city has already been attacked three times,” commented Yu Jing Jiu. “The invasion this time is quite large”

“Ai, so hateful!” Zong Tu couldn’t accept it. “Unfortunately my strength is too weak, otherwise I would have gone to kill those damned Dark Abyss demons!”

Xue Ying also felt anxious.

But the Infernal Realm had already been temporarily shut off from the mortal realm and Transcendents were currently prohibited from going there. The Transcendents could only wait for further instructions from the Infernal Palace whilst they stayed inside the Xia Capital.

.....

The sky gradually darkened.

The cold air also become colder, but Xue Ying and the others could only wait. Actually, Xue Ying was really worried about his family since the demons were attacking without restraint. Were his parents and little brother still fine? But he had no way of rescuing them. He was only able to communicate with them by using the communication wristband, asking them to temporarily seek shelter in a remote area at the foot of the mountain.

“Mn?” Xue Ying suddenly let out a voice. Cheng Ling Shu, Yu Jing Qiu, Zong Tu, Yuan Qing and the others looked at their communication wristbands.

A message was sent to each of them.

This message was from the Infernal Palace.

“Now is the time for war!

“As you already know, Dark Abyss demons have already invaded. We are unable to determine the exact scale of the invasion, but there are two things you Transcendents have to keep in mind!”

“One, people can only enter but not leave the Infernal Realm! All Demigods and below have to stay in the Infernal Realm, awaiting further commands.”

“Two, our Xia Clan Demigods can help relocate all the important family members of Transcendents into the Infernal Realm. All Transcendents, please inform us of their names within the next two hours. Remember, each Transcendent is only allowed to write a maximum of ten mortal’s names.”

The message was really simple.

But it caused some Transcendents to feel pressure.

It was really easy to relocate their families. One province usually only had ten Transcendents. It would be very easy for a Demigod to make a trip and send the Transcendent’s family to the Infernal Realm.

Xue Ying and the others didn’t dare delay and immediately contacted their families.

Every Transcendent was only allowed to relocate ten people. The crux of this matter was that, for those Transcendents that had already lived for hundreds or even thousands of years, if they were not limited by a quota, then perhaps one Transcendent would relocate hundreds or even thousands of people.

“Father, mother, I will relocate both of you, along with brother, uncle Zong and uncle Tong. At most, I am allowed to bring ten people. If there’s still another person whom you are willing to bring, immediately inform me!” Xue Ying conveyed this message to his loved ones.

In a short time, a name list was arranged.

Xue Ying’s parents and uncle Zong had no requests, uncle Tong wished to bring his wife and child. His brother Qing Shi, who now stayed at Eternal Wind

Academy, wished to bring three fellow students to the Infernal Realm, if there were still some slots left. Xue Ying didn't have any opposition towards this request, as it perfectly made the headcount of ten people. He quickly sent this name list to the Infernal Palace.

\*\*\*\*\*

This night definitely was not a peaceful night for the Xia Clan.

Transcendents were gathered at several places. All of them were anxious, but they could only wait. They clearly knew ... it took only one elite Demigod with Deity Weapons to kill a Sky or even Saint Transcendent!

They couldn't do anything to help, and even if they were not content with waiting, they could only obediently stay.

In times like this, it really showed that Demigods were the backbone of Xia Clan!

A powerful Demigod, not only was their strength great, they also could easily penetrate through space and travel to various places.

"They're here."

"Someone's family member has arrived."

As the first group of family members arrived, the Transcendents came to greet them. Some Transcendents even went to the Infernal Realm's gate to welcome the newcomers.

Xue Ying, Yu Jing Qiu and the others floated in the sky, looking at Infernal Realm's gate in the distant high mountain.

Slowly waiting.

Occasionally there were some arriving family members that came from the province that those Transcendents had come from.

"It's people from the Tranquil Sun Province." Xue Ying, Yu Jing Qiu, Yuan Jing, Cheng Ling Shu and others were now full of life.

Only then did they see a crowd of people passing through the realm's gate.

"Mother." Yu Jing Qiu flew immediately to meet her family.

Xue Ying's eyes suddenly brightened. He saw his cherished family in the crowd — a robust man and a purple — robed married woman, a six armed devil serpent, and a family of lion-men by their side. On the other side was the extremely handsome Qing Shi and his fellow students — two females and one male.

“Brother!” Shouted Qing Shi.

“Xue Ying,” Mo Yang Yu, his mother, said while smiling. She was happy, not because they escaped from hardship, but because she was seeing her son. Because the Xia Clan world was so broad, it would be fairly rare for any of its inhabitants to encounter those demons. Moreover, the area where Mo Yang Yu and the others lived in was relatively remote. His brother Qing Shi also lived in the Eternal Wind Academy. They hadn't been threatened by the demons.

It was Xue Ying that was the happiest when they arrived.

After all, it was already a long time since they had last met.

“Mn?” While he was really happy to meet his family, he saw that his little brother and one of his female companions had a close relationship.

*Hu.* Xue Ying quickly flew over to welcome his family.

---

## Chapter 3 – One Year's Time

---

After knowing demons had invaded their world, many Transcendents including Xue Ying, felt very troubled. However, reuniting with their own loved ones brought them indisputable joy.

“That mansion is my abode within the Xia Capital” Xue Ying brought his parents and the others from his group across the sky with his World Energy before pointing out to a huge mansion ahead.

“It seems quite big, and much more exquisite than our Snowrock Castle. Xue Ying, don't you feel that it is very empty when you're living by yourself in such a huge mansion?” His mother, Mo Yang Qi, curiously asked after seeing it.

“Mother.”

Qing Shi shouted out after her question, “From what I heard, the mansions of Transcendents in the Xia Capital contain a large groups of servants. Naturally, the mansion would will not feel too empty with so many servants living within it!” Even though that was what he said, Qing Shi was still looking curiously at this majestic city. After all, this was the true core and most important city of the entire Xia Clan.

It was not just Qing Shi, all the other family members curiously looked around as well.

This was their first time here in the Xia Capital. However, in view of an extraordinary status that the Dong Bo Clan had, they knew that the Xia Capital was special – more than half of the entire Xia Clan's Transcendents were gathered in this location! That included a large number of Legend rankers.

“We are going down.”

Descending upon the front gate, Xue Ying brought his family members towards the mansion.

The front gate was wide open with many guards standing by the gate's sides. The female housekeeper, Xu Qin, had already brought a group of maidservants over to await orders.

"Greetings, master," Xu Qin greeted. Following that, the other maidservants greeted in an orderly manner.

"So many... I think there might be more than a thousand." This greeting broadened Qing Shi's awareness of the world.

"All the maidservants are female." The young female beside Qing Shi laughed. The other pair of friends were similarly shocked at the sight.

Without speaking about the others in their party, even Dong Bo Li and Mo Yang Yu were startled at what they saw.

That was because, with a single glance, they could see that the female housekeeper Xu Qin and other maidservants appearances fit a certain criteria. Not only were they all extremely beautiful, but obedient as well. This situation was a stark contrast to the maidservants of Snowrock Castle who were quite clumsy.

"The housing and the servants were all arranged by the Infernal Palace," Xue Ying laughed. "Please come in. Xu Qin, arrange a feast tonight."

"Yes, master," the female housekeeper Xu Qin acknowledged respectfully.

Initially, she thought that her master would certain things to her. Yet twenty years down the road, she was clearly mistaken. Regardless of this, she enjoyed her peaceful life.

Evening.

Within the great hall of the mansion, everyone was seated cross-legged on the floor with a table in front of them. The seating arrangement was quite casual, without regard to anyone's status.

"Brother, your days here are truly comfortable. So many beauties serving you, and so much delicious food for you to eat. Wa, I've eaten so much that even my



tongue is about to enter my stomach. It has been quite a while since I've eaten so much good food." Although his young female friend beside him acted in a more controlled manner, Qing Shi ate and drank voraciously. The other pair of friends of his were similarly eating in a more decent manner.

After all, it was because of Qing Shi that they were allowed to enter the Xia Capital. Being in front of a Transcendent made them feel quite nervous.

"What Qing Shi said is not wrong," The lion-man, Tong San, laughed. "These dishes are indeed delicious."

"Since more than half of the Transcendents are gathered here in the Xia Capital, all the various precious food ingredients would be sent over to this location," Xue Ying laughed as he explained. This was the first time his family members had visited. Furthermore, the ingredients used to cook this particular feast cost one kilogram of Origin Stone, so how could it not be excellent? However, seeing that his family members would be staying here for a period of time, such an extravagant meal would only be prepared occasionally. Even Demigods themselves would not spend so much to eat such a meal every single day.

Everyone feasted to the point that their stomachs were bloated.

Dong Bo Lie had long eaten his fill. Sipping a mouthful of wine, he asked, "Xue Ying, do you know how many demons invaded our Xia Clan's World this time?"

Suddenly, the whole place quieted down.

"This situation is quite serious," Xue Ying frowned. "Most likely it will not be solved within a short period of time."

He had read many scrolls within the Summer Pavilion.

This allowed him to make an analysis and make a deduction from his extensive knowledge.

"Short period of time? How long is this period of time then?" Dong Bo Lie continued with his questions.

"Possibly a hundred years." The moment Xue Ying said that, the whole atmosphere became heavy and serious. The looming threat brought by the

demons... couldn't be solved even in a hundred years of time?

“All of you, please be reassured. Even though the start of the invasion involved such a huge movement, all of you didn't have any contact with them, isn't that right?” Xue Ying laughed. “And as time passes, the demons will start to lay low to such an extent that even if you want to meet one... it would still be an extremely rare event! Solving this matter will ultimately be dependent on the Transcendents.”

The clash between Transcendents and demon would occasionally affect several mortals. However, compared to how vast the Xia Clan's World was, this was not worth mentioning.

The overall situation regarding to the mortals could be controlled. What was more crucial to this matter would be the Transcendents! They had to withstand the attacks. After all, if they did not, then who would?

.....

The passing days saw many Transcendents within Xia Capital receiving news via various channels describing how the Demigod overlords were battling fiercely with the Abyss Demons.

There were many huge battles.

Because those who participated in the battles on the human's side were all Demigods and most had Deity Weapons, few were sacrificed in the battles with demons. At the most, they would be injured. These human Demigods could also help each other in times of need.

Of course...

There were still a few who died!

Dragon Mountain Calendar, Year 9662, March. One of the human Demigods, Gray Sword Knight Pang Bai, died in battle! The moment that this news was released, all the Transcendents within the Xia Capital fell into shock and grief. Gray Sword Knight Pang Bai could not even last breath of time before the other Demigods could arrive to save him. He was immediately killed by a demon called Tu Lu Wu.

Of course, two months later, demon Tu Lu Wu, was chased by Mountain Lord He to the Red Moon Lake. During the battle, the entire Red Moon Lake had been annihilated. Mountain Lord He suppressed this demon with his power, and with the aid of old granny Ye, they killed this demon Tu Lu Wu.

Dragon Mountain Calendar, Year 9662, October. Another human Demigod, Violent Blood Knight Liang Fang, died in battle! Liang Fang's combat power was much stronger than the previous Gray Sword Knight, and he was close to the top ten existences in Demigod rankings. His True Meaning, the True Meaning of Violent Blood, was actually a grade four True Meaning! That True Meaning was definitely something extremely bold and violent! And yet he was still killed by one of the strongest invading demons – Ice Demon Sa Ka! Even though Eternal Wind Knight Chi Qiu Bai and Thunder God Chao Qing reached the scene moments later, this Ice Demon Sa Ka did not continue fighting and instead escaped from the scene. His ability in escaping was really formidable.

Time passed.

The news being passed to the Transcendents staying in Xia Capital gradually became less frequent. Still, the provided information regarding the peak Demigod demon existences became more detailed.

Even though two human Demigods had died, this was still ultimately the territory of the humans. Furthermore, many of them had powerful Deity weapons, and some of these weapons were even clan protection treasures! Thus resulting in the death of even more demons.

September of Year 9662.

A total of nine Demigod demons had been killed by the humans! The information network provided by the Xia Clan was unmistakably detailed. However, the remaining Demigod demons had learned their lessons. These Demigod demons who survived even after being rounded up or falling into traps were either extremely powerful in terms of their combat ability or had especially unique techniques. Either that, or they were more cunning than the other Demigod demons.

Thus, after September of Year 9662, the Xia Clan faced difficulties in finding traces of any Demigod demons.

---

---

# Chapter 4 – Discussions amongst Transcendents

---

Scarlet Cloud Mountain World, Soaring Cloud Peak.

The top of Soaring Cloud Peak was extremely quiet. Xue Ying's heart was exceptionally calm whilst looking out at the vast mountain range. Even though many Transcendents frequently visited the restaurants and taverns in order to gather information and discuss the various battles between human Demigods and demons, Xue Ying was too lazy to care about these things. After all, would discussions help the battles? Absolutely not!

Thus, he would temporarily push everything to the back of his mind and focus on cultivating his spear techniques with a single heart.

The spear flew around, displaying powerful might.

Xue Ying's training of the spear was slow. One would only see the spear's rotation akin to that of a huge wave maelstrom that wanted to swallow and absorb all the incoming attacks against it.

*True Meaning of Extreme Piercing is a purely offensive True Meaning, and not appropriate for defense! The fusion of Profound Mysteries of Water, Fire, and Wind to defend... is ultimately lacking.* Xue Ying pondered over the issue of defense.

Water, Fire, and Wind, the perfect fusion of these three Profound Mysteries would give rise to a second grade True Meaning, the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing.

The fusion would be much weaker when used in areas other than offense.

For instance, in the area of illusions, it was merely the embryonic form of a

grade three True Meaning, the True Meaning of Illusions.

In the area of defense, the embryonic form of True Meaning had not yet been formed. Clearly, the three Profound Mysteries of Water, Fire, and Wind... were more appropriate for attacking and were quite lacking in the area of defense.

*Attacking and defending are the most fundamental, Xue Ying frowned. If it is merely just Extreme Piercing, then the weakness of my spear technique would be too obvious.*

Suddenly—

Xue Ying stopped his spear practice. He had received a message through his communication wristband.

The Infernal Palace was convening all Transcendents for a discussion.

And they wanted everyone to head towards the main hall of the Infernal Palace as soon as possible.

“Transcendent discussion? Brother Xue Ying, for the Infernal Palace to suddenly convene all Transcendents to hold a discussion, in your opinion, what do you think is happening?” Yu Jing Qiu, who had been beside Xue Ying all along, had received a similar message. Xue Ying was training his spear techniques whereas she was investigating various spells.

Xue Ying laughed, “What could it be other than something related to the demons! If I’m not wrong, the Infernal Palace might be giving us some missions. Our peaceful days will be coming to an end.”

“Us?” Jing Qiu was startled. “We are going to participate in the battles too?”

“All of us Transcendents,” Xue Ying said. “And this is just my guess. Let’s go. We’ll know about it soon.”

“Mn.” Jing Qiu nodded thoughtfully.

The two of them turned into streams, flying side by side towards the exit of Scarlet Cloud Mountain World.

.....

Infernal Palace main hall North Summer Palace.

*Sou sou sou.*

Many figures flew in from all over towards the North Summer Palace before entering it.

Although the great hall was quite majestic, it was still quaint within, following the Xia Clan's most ancient traditions.

On top of the great hall.

There were currently eight figures sitting cross-legged on the top. In the middle, there was a black-haired old man who was none other than the head of Infernal Palace, Palace Head Chen.

The eight of them were facing the huge crowd of Transcendents coming into the great hall.

"Hurry, let's take a seat."

Xue Ying and Jing Qiu casually chose a location and each sat cross-legged on top of a futon.

"Brother Xue Ying, the two of you have arrived."

"Big brother Peng Shan, Jing Qiu and I just arrived," Xue Ying looked at Peng Shan, Chen Ling Shu and Zong Tu, who were seated beside them.

The entire great hall was filled with Transcendents coming in one by one, choosing a futon and then seating themselves in a cross-legged manner.

They transmitted messages around and discussed what they thought was going on.

Approximately the time taken to brew a cup of tea after Xue Ying and the rest came in...

*Hong long long~* The huge door started closing shut. All the Transcendents looked respectfully towards the eight Demigods seated in front of them.

"Fellow Transcendents, you have all arrived," The black-haired old man Palace Head Chen started, "I believe that all of you should have guessed the reason why we decided to convene here! Indeed, it's related to the Abyss Demons."

"Ever since winter of the previous year and a space crack appeared, leading to

Abyss Demons entering our Xia Clan's world, our Xia Clan's peaceful days ended. A large horde of demons invaded our homeland, and they wantonly slaughtered our people!" Palace Head Chen said, "What would be best is if they continued this wanton destruction. If they did, our Xia Clan's Demigods could easily find and exterminate them all immediately! However, the demons are, by nature, cruel and cunning. In the beginning, due to their greed for human souls, they behaved extremely willfully. But gradually, they have learned their lessons, becoming more and more restrained and hid deeper and deeper."

"Initially when we first began our counter attack, many demons were killed. There were times where we could just slaughter a huge group of them in a battle. However, as time passed, the number of demons we killed became fewer and fewer."

"Until today!"

"It is almost impossible for us to find a single demon."

"They have all hidden themselves!" Palace Head Chen's facial expression revealed his killing intent, as his eyes glinted, "According to the records of our battle, there are three Demigod demons who've exchanged moves with us that are still alive. Furthermore, from my suspicions... there should still be several Demigod demons hiding who have yet to fight with us! We've found clues leading to the conclusion that these demons who have yet to fight with us are extremely cunning and prudent."

"Other than the Demigod demons, there are still many other demons hiding who are even more cunning."

"To these demons, our human souls are a top-grade nourishing meal for them! Consuming human souls would greatly benefit a demon and improve their individual combat power. If they were given the chance to casually roam around different places, eating human souls in the dark... then this nourishment might produce another Demigod demon amongst them!"

"We absolutely must not allow them to casually eat these human souls, which would allow them to become even more powerful!"

"However right now, there is only a small number of Demigods, and it is really difficult for us to find these hidden demons," Palace Head Chen said. "Thus,



we've decided that it is time for all our Transcendents to do their part in sacrificing themselves!"

All Transcendents of Xia Clan seated cross-legged below became alert after hearing that.

Sacrifice?

"All of you are Transcendents who have comprehended the World and have extremely keen senses towards the Myriad Existences," Palace Head Chen said. "I require you to return to your hometowns and explore various places in the mortal world! As you explore, I want you to utilise your keen senses to find any traces of these demons! The moment you discover one, immediately report to your superiors and there will be Demigods arriving shortly thereafter."

"And it's not just all of you. The Legend ranking knights and mages who have attained One with the World will also be assisting in finding these traces of demons as well."

"However, their comprehension of the World is too low, and can not be compared with you guys! As Transcendents, your comprehension is much higher than them, and your soul is much stronger! Thus, your senses towards the Realms of Myriad Existences will exceed that of these Legend rankers. It would be easier for you to discover traces of demons as your senses are powerful by more than a thousand, or even ten thousand times a Legend ranker."

"Depart to the various locations and look for the demons. You may be on this task for a long time."

"These demons will either continue hiding or going out to eat some human souls. By eating human souls, they will expose themselves, and you will have a chance to discover them."

"If you discover one, then kill one!"

"Maybe during the process of searching, you might be killed in retaliation by others the demons."

"Or maybe, these demons might have allies, and they might ask for help, resulting in a Demigod demon appearing."

“But regardless of the situation, we must exterminate all these demons, the earlier the better!”

“The total number of demons invading this time is huge. After analysing their numbers, I’m afraid that the battle with them will last more than 1000 years,” Palace Head Chen looked towards all the Xia Clan’s Transcendents. “As the Transcendents of this current era, we are destined to make sacrifices. Some of you might die from the retaliation or revenge of these demons.”

“However—”

“As Transcendents, if we are afraid and dare not go up against the demons, then who will? The mortals?”

“Thus, we must be the ones to step out and continue this battle with them. In the end, the one who will end up victorious will be our Xia Clan,” Palace Head Chen said in a high-pitched voice. “All Transcendents, with the lowest tier being the pseudo-Transcendents and the highest tier being the Demigods, none of us can cower from our mission! All Transcendents must participate. Three months from now, all of you will be leaving the Infernal Palace back to your own hometown. The Infernal Palace will also be sending out many missions and rewards. The resources accumulated by our Xia Clan over the eras will be taken out in large amounts, with all of them having just one purpose — to fully exterminate all demons!”

All the Transcendents felt their spirits and killing intent rise.

Kill.

This conflict was a battle between humans and demons. Since the demons wanted to consume human souls as food, then humankind would retaliate and exterminate all of them! Even though there could possibly be many deaths amongst the Transcendents who fall in battle, those who were alive would continue on with their fight against these demons! After all, they were the Transcendents of humankind!

“Other than the demons, you must also be aware of the Demonic Faction!” Palace Head Chen coldly said, “The Demonic Faction’s adherents have always believed in the great Demonic God from the Dark Abyss. According to history, there were many cases of these human mortals and Transcendent believers

colluding with the demons. In the past, such occurrences would not have mattered much. Now though, the moment you discover anyone belonging to the Demonic Faction, you must kill them without mercy!”

---

# Chapter 5 – Intelligence on Demons

---

Kill without mercy!

Prior to the recent demonic invasion, even though the majority of Xia Clan Transcendents did not have a positive opinion of the extremely selfish Transcendents belonging to Demonic Faction, they would turn a blind eye towards the matter of a human worshipping a demon. For the most part, the fervent Transcendent believers from the Temple of the Earth God were the most active in chasing and killing those from the Demonic Faction. Rumors also suggested that there might have been some demons hiding within the Demonic Faction. Though these demons appeared to be on their last legs, and so they would not be able to cause any huge waves within the human world.

However, the current situation was absolutely different! Huge armies of demons had invaded the human Transcendent homeland. If the invasion force alliances with the Demonic Faction members, there would be a new power structure and organisation that would certainly increase the threat brought by the demons!

As a result, the Xia Clan's Infernal Palace would certainly put in their utmost effort in chasing and killing those from the Demonic Faction!

"As you all know, demons vary in strength and power," Palace Head Chen continued elaborating. "Whilst you are searching for the demons, you must take into account how your combat power compares to theirs before taking action. We've obtained and compiled the best possible intelligence from various sources regarding these demons! One of the surprising pieces of information we discovered was the sheer number of demons. We discovered that there is approximately 6000 demons. Even with this discovery, we believe that number represents only a portion of their great army. There are still many demons we've

yet to collect any intelligence on. As a result of our lack of intelligence on all of those additional demons, you all will probably end up encountering them and have to make judgements based on the circumstances you find yourselves in.”

All the Transcendents listening, including Xue Ying, felt tremors going through their hearts.

They had already collected intelligence on more than six thousand demons? That was an enormous number!

One must know that Demigods had extremely formidable investigation skills, including the ability to scrutinize a demon’s soul and mind. Despite this, they were only able to uncover a small part of the great demonic army.

*Hua!*

Copies of extremely detailed intelligence reports were sent to all Xia Clan Transcendents.

Xue Ying immediately read through the entire report.

Abyss Demons.

The Xia Clan categorises the demons according to combat power.

The strongest demons are Demigod; These demons have the capability of matching up with the top 10 Demigods in the Demigod rankings compiled by the Xia Clan! The moment any Transcendents not of the Demigod realm are to see a Demigod demon, they are to flee on sight! One should know that the majority of those top 10 Demigod rankers, excluding those amongst the Transcendent natives, are human or Beast Clan Demigods who own a Deity Weapon! That fact implies that those living Demigod demons, who have been discovered and chased after by human Demigods with a Deity Weapon, are extremely terrifying.

The following demon ranks are listed from fifth to first, with fifth rank being the most powerful and first being the least powerful. Fifth rank demons: Combat power equivalent to those Transcendents in the top 10 of the Saint rankings and are, therefore, extremely powerful. The most powerful of these demons are even stronger than the current number one ranker in the Saint rankings. These demons have the power to match a human Demigod! Though

they are few in numbers, killing these demons are a priority as they were most likely to become Demigods should they be allowed to continue consuming human souls.

Fourth rank demons: Combat power equivalent to the top 30 within the Saint rankings and are therefore relatively strong. They are also fewer in numbers. Likewise, a similar priority is placed on these killing demons from since they might become Demigod demons in the future.

Third rank demons: Combat power equivalent to peak stage Saint realm Transcendents. This group of demons are commonly seen.

Second rank demons: Combat power equivalent to early to middle stage Saint realm Transcendents. These are considered as young demons.

First rank demons: Combat power equivalent to middle to peak stage Sky realm Transcendents. These are the weakest of all demons and by far the most numerous. Most Sky realm peak stage Transcendents should be able to kill them. Even though they are the weakest and youngest demons, these demons will grow with time! Therefore, they are to be killed as early as possible, thwarting their potential!

Let me remind all of you again—

Demons are Transcendents originating from the Dark Abyss. Their innate talent is much stronger than the Primordial Beings spoken about in our Xia Clan's legends! They have gained their combat experiences through an extremely brutal environment in the Dark Abyss. Some of their fighting styles are known while some are quite strange and mysterious. If one is careless, even with a combat power equivalent to the demon, one still might die from the clash against the demon!

Below is a detailed list of demons and their combat abilities.

.....

The list was densely written, with more than 6000 demons being introduced in a detailed manner.

Xue Ying felt his heart become heavy as he read through this immense list. This information, which included each demon's power and status, was merely a part

of the knowledge the Demigods had gathered regarding the great demon army that had invaded their Xia Clan's world! As time passes, these demons would have a qualitative change after swallowing human souls in the mortal world, meaning the humans could no longer wait. They had to exterminate every single demon as quickly as possible.

Even the strongest Demigod demons, standing at the peak of existence, must be killed as soon as possible. Should these Demigod demons breakthrough and become a Demonic Deity, then the entire Xia Clan's world would be massacred.

Fortunately, these demons were just like human Transcendents, it was extremely tough for any Demigod to become a Deity. For demons to breakthrough... the difficulty might even be greater than humans.

"In the following three months, all of you must memorise every single piece of intelligence on these demons!" After transmitting the intelligence in the time taken to brew a cup of tea, Palace Head Chen added, "Concerning the rewards for discovering any demons, or killing these demons, or killing any Transcendents belonging to the Demonic Faction... my Infernal Palace is currently still drafting up the plan! After it is finalised, we will inform all Transcendents!"

Other than motivating the Transcendents through the threat of the entire clan's extinction, there were also rewards being given for those who had put in effort – the more effort one put into the mission, the greater the rewards.

As for those who were too lazy and decided to evade danger, naturally they would not receive anything!

\*\*\*\*\*

The crux of this Transcendent discussion was for the Infernal Palace Head Chen to pass down his commands.

*Hong long long~* The hall door started opening slowly.

All the Transcendents flew out the door in an orderly manner and scattered in different directions.

*Three months.* Xue Ying gazed down at the buzzing Xia Capital. *Three months from now, the Xia Capital will not be as crowded.*

When that time arrives, all Transcendents lower than the realm of Demigod, inclusive of the Legend rankers, would be required to leave the Xia Capital and head towards the mortal world in order to search for traces of demons hiding within it.

.....

Scarlet Cloud Mountain World.

After the Transcendent discussion ended, Master Gong Yu gathered all the Substitute Elders in Scarlet Cloud Mountain.

“All Demigods are extremely busy. During the past year, I’ve stayed within this Scarlet Cloud Mountain World and merely sent my Qi avatar to participate in the battles,” Master Gong Yu spoke to the young Transcendents in front of him. “According to the command set by Infernal Palace, three months from now, all of you will have to leave Xia Capital and travel back to your hometowns. As for the resources that you have been enjoying so far...”

“My Infernal Palace will give them to you year by year! Every time we give them to you, the amount will be equivalent to a whole year!”

“Of course, the moment you become a Saint realm Transcendent, we will stop giving you all these resources,” Master Gong Yu said. “Whether it is time for you to become one or not, I will let all of you make that decision on your own.”

Saying that...

*Bang!*

Xue Ying, Chen Qing, Jing Qiu, and Wen Yong An were all startled as they looked towards the source of the sound.

Situ Hong’s facial colour was vibrant. The aura emitted from his body was currently undergoing change as an even stronger aura leaked.

“Saint realm?”

All those who were present wore a shocked expression.

He broke through to the Saint realm?

The Qi of a Saint Transcendent and a Sky Transcendent had obvious



differences. After undergoing a Qi rebirth, this Transcendent Qi would allow one's body and soul to be nourished. There was a marked increase in their lifespan as after this transformation, Saint realm Transcendents could live for 1500 years.

"I've long reached the limit in transforming my Qi. Since the demons are here, I'll definitely not retreat from them. At this moment, only when our combat power is stronger can we kill demons who are more powerful!" Saying that, Situ Hong laughed as he behaved like the hero of humanity.

He was relatively proud of himself.

Look at me, I can breakthrough to the Saint realm as easy as drinking water!

As for why he decided to bask himself in spotlight this last moment, it was because of Xue Ying's position, which was rank one, and that Xue Ying had completed the Mountain Road life-death mission. Recently, these facts had made Situ Hong feel really suffocated and extremely unhappy! Thus, he clearly wanted to bask in the spotlight this last moment. Thinking that because Xue Ying was so young, he certainly would not have reached Grand Completion in transforming his Qi.

*How childish*, Xue Ying thought to himself while shaking his head.

Must one be so rushed when breaking through?

One must know that after a breakthrough in Transcendent Qi, one would still need to nourish the body and soul, and usually, they would do both at once while they were in closed-door cultivation. Right now, Situ Hong first broke through his Qi in front of everyone, before continuing to nourishing his body and soul after everyone dispersed, showing how deliberate and lacking he was in patience!

This Situ Hong, amongst all the Substitute Elders within Scarlet Cloud Mountain, was the one with the worst character. Right now, it seemed that even his mental and spiritual fortitude was the weakest of them all! With such a spirit state, his spirit would certainly be suppressed heavily during the second section of the Mountain Road mission... and that it would be really difficult for him to get through that section!

“Very good.”

Master Gong Yu nodded and smiled, “That should be the way. All Transcendents must put in their utmost effort in killing all the demons! However, you shouldn’t be so rushed, because we will be issuing the year’s quota of resources today, and you could have broken through tomorrow! Since you’ve already broken through... you are a Saint realm Transcendent now, and thus, you will no longer have the qualifications to enjoy anymore resources.”

Situ Hong’s expression froze!

They would be issuing this year’s resources today?

He thought that only after they left the Xia Capital would the resources for the year be distributed. It was merely a day and he would not be able to enjoy the year’s resources anymore.

The Transcendents present, including Xue Ying, all laughed in their hearts.  
*Show off some more. I bet you must be full of regrets now.*

---

# Chapter 6 – Hundred-Battles Chamber

## Combat

---

As time passed by, the end of the three month period approached. The atmosphere in Xia Capital gradually changed. While Transcendents were required to perform ten mandatory life-death missions, they would usually wait at least three, five, or even ten years before taking on additional missions. The primary reason they would take additional missions was to stimulate a cultivation breakthrough when they faced a bottleneck.

Because of the relatively slow pace between life-death missions, a Transcendent's ordinary everyday life was usually very carefree and leisurely. After all, in peaceful times, life for a Transcendent was very relaxed.

With the advent of the demon attack, a Transcendent's life would no longer be the same! After the Transcendents arrive at their hometowns, according to the Infernal Palace's plan, Transcendents would then have to search for demons. Although they could slack off if they wanted to avoid danger, they would still be required to look around periodically to save some face. Even if they couldn't find any demons, the demons were still a danger to them as they could attack at any time. While only a handful of Demigod demons existed, the weaker demons abounded in overwhelming numbers.

Transcendents...

Although the human Transcendents were bursting with a thirst for battle and desire to kill these demons, they still feared for their lives.

They also had to consider the fact that especially selfish Transcendents had already joined the Demonic Faction, colluding with the demons, and even helping them!

.....

Night

Nightlife in the Xia Clan capital was especially lively.

Transcendents and Legend rankers gathered together. After all, it would be rare to meet like this again after they left Xia Clan capital.

Currently, a young man and woman walked side by side. Based on their appearances, they appeared to be in their twenties.

“Brother Xue Ying,” said Yu Jing Qiu. “Do you plan on taking the Hundred-Battles Chamber test tomorrow?”

“Yes, I have to do it once before leaving. If I succeed, I can earn more resources. If I pass, I can exchange my points for Transcendent weapons, powerful arrays, and other things. These items will help me add more security to Snowrock Castle,” said Xue Ying. Since he was able to complete the Mountain Road mission, he had high expectations of being able to pass the Hundred-Battle Chamber test.

“Disciple Brother Xue Ying, you haven’t even cultivated for 60 years yet. If you succeed, the number of contribution points awarded will be amazing,” Yu Jing Qiu looked forward to watching him take the test. “I believe your Snowrock Castle is the first, or second safest place in the whole Tranquil Sun Province. I don’t know whether you, Disciple Brother Xue Ying, would allow me to stay there.”

“Ha ha, of course I would let you stay. If someone were to search far and wide, they would not be able to find a Transcendent Mage as powerful as Jing Qiu! With you there, we can easily set up powerful magical defensive arrays,” said Xue Ying.

“So it’s a deal then!” laughed Yu Jing Qiu.

“It’s a deal,” Xue Ying felt his heart grow warmer.

The coming war with demons may last for a long time, but at least he could still be together with Jing Qiu, for which Xue Ying felt satisfied.

“Disciple brother Xue Ying, your comprehension of the Profound Mysteries of

Water and Fire is already at the third level in Realms of Myriad Existences. Have you already completely assimilated your Transcendent Qi?” asked Yu Jing Qiu.

“Yes, I’ve completely assimilated my Transcendent Qi. I can breakthrough to Saint realm anytime,” replied Xue Ying.

Just saying those words was enough to make many Sky realm Transcendents feel envious.

For those jealous Sky realm Transcendents, there was nothing they could do.

Before sixty years of age, Xue Ying had been able to comprehend the third level of the Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire. After years of assimilating his Transcendent Qi, he was finally able to comprehend the third level of the fusion between all three elements of Water, Fire and Wind into the embryonic form of the True Meaning of Illusions. This third level fusion greatly increased his efficiency in assimilating his Transcendent Qi! Following this assimilation, he later comprehended the grade two True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, which would steeply increase his ability to further assimilate Transcendent Qi. As of six months ago, he was ready to breakthrough to Saint realm anytime he wished.

Because the Hundred-Battles Chamber test loomed in his near future, Xue Ying didn’t dare to make an early breakthrough. After all, if he wanted to get those hundred thousand contribution points, he must be a Sky realm Transcendent younger than 60 years old!

“Waiting until you finish the Hundred-Battles Chamber test to breakthrough sounds like the right idea. Disciple Brother Xue Ying, when do you plan to breakthrough?” asked Yu Jing Qiu happily.

“After I take the Hundred-Battles Chamber test,” replied Xue Ying. “I have to improve my strength for the war against demons. My hope is that tomorrow I will successfully complete the Hundred-Battles Chamber test. Those contribution points will help me greatly.”

Having twenty thousand contribution points would enable him to spend them in various ways without restraint.

“You will definitely succeed!” Yu Jing Qiu said with full confidence.

.....

Dawn of the second day.

Xue Ying went to Infernal Palace alone. He walked along the winding corridor until he arrived at Hundred-Battles Chamber. Once he touched the chamber's exterior, his body passed through the door into the Hundred-Battles Chamber's interior.

*Weng—*

The scenery in front of him changed.

This was a huge and spacious chamber. Xue Ying saw human-shaped statues in the distance. Each of those human-shaped statues were two meters tall, and each wielded a weapon like a spear, an axe, chains, a long spear, a sword, a heavy hammer, a shield and other various weapons.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying, please choose your weapon from the rack beside you. You are prohibited from using Transcendent items other than storage treasure inside the Hundred-Battles Chamber. Using other items will immediately disqualify you,” echoed a voice inside the chamber.

Xue Ying knew that this voice belonged to the Infernal Palace spirit.

*Hua.*

As Xue Ying walked towards the weapon rack, his boots vanished. Walking barefoot made him feel the really cold floor. As for his clothes, Xue Ying already prepared what he would wear.

After arriving in front of the weapon rack, with a wave of his hand, all the weapons were taken into his storage ring. Doing this provided Xue Ying with a way to freely use any weapon he need when fighting.

“I will use this one.” Suddenly a silver spear appeared in Xue Ying's hand. With a little vibration, he felt the strength transmission was quite perfect.

*Du! Du! Du! Du! Du! Du!*

With a slightly muffled sound, suddenly those human-shaped statues in the distance came alive. Every statue's eyes lit up and while their body glowed with a dark red light. A hundred Transcendent human-shaped refiner organisms stared at Xue Ying. Some gazed at him with mocking smiles, some humphed coldly,

some laughed, and some appeared indifferent.

Each Transcendent refiner organism had their own mind.

“Someone has come.”

“Another opponent has entered the chamber.”

“Brothers, attack!”

“Everyone, let’s slowly play with our new victim. Don’t end the fun too fast. Last time, that Transcendent lost after only fighting one of us.” The Transcendent organisms were named by their numerical designations. “Old Eighteen, your move was too powerful, and you almost made that Transcendent mince meat. Fortunately for him, you still left him with half his body which enabled him to keep his life.”

The hundred refiner organisms excitedly at Xue Ying.

Instantly, Xue Ying’s body blurred and separated into three figures.

Three black clothed Xue Ying figures looked at the group of Transcendent refiner organisms.

As 100,000 contribution points rode on the outcome of this battle, Xue Ying naturally didn’t dare to be careless! Although he had already completed the Mountain Road mission successfully, his success only meant that he now had a high probability of winning this Hundred-Battles Chamber test. The Hundred-Battles Chamber and the Mountain Road mission were very different. The Mountain Road mission was exclusive to Substitute Elders and had a high requirement towards the mission taker’s True Meaning Embryonic Form.

The Hundred-Battles Chamber test was available to all Transcendents. It did not matter if they had already completely comprehended a grade seven, six, or other grade True Meaning, nor did it matter if the Hundred-Battles Chamber challenger was a Substitute Elder that was barely able to comprehend a True Meaning Embryonic Form, all Transcendents had different fighting styles.

A high grade True Meaning Embryonic Form was more profound!

Although low grade True Meanings seem mediocre, it was still a complete True Meaning, and its battle capability was more comprehensive. *I hope I don’t fail*

*here!* Thought Xue Ying, with a fighting spirit kindled in his eyes.

“He’s really interesting. He is able to divide himself into three images from one being.”

“This is exciting!”

“No matter if it’s three or ten, everyone, besiege him!”

Suddenly, a golden pattern appeared on all of the refiner organism’s body. Shortly after the pattern appeared, the pattern lit up and connected each organism with a beam of light. As a result, a powerful array was activated inside the chamber. All the refiner organisms then seemed to become more powerful.

“Attack!” The hundred human-shaped refiner organisms scattered around the chamber and became shadows as they attacked from all sides. They completely surrounded Xue Ying.

Each statue moved at high speeds. In a short moment, the refiner organisms attacked with their various weapons, spears whistling at him with terrible might; swords slashing at him with strange moves; shields ramming at him in forceful thrusts. Xue Ying, in short was engulfed by attacks from all kinds of weapons which were aimed at all three Xue Ying figures.

---



## Chapter 7 – Requiring External Assistance

---

The three Xue Ying figures suddenly each had a total of six arms and three silver spears each.

Although the hundreds of refiner organisms' eyes momentarily flashed red, their incoming attacks remained unchanged, seemingly showing that they did not care how many arms or spears Xue Ying had. All they thought of was to surround Xue Ying together and suppress him! Hundreds of weapons came pressing over Xue Ying, making him feel defenseless, - like how the saying goes: *two arms are hard-pressed against four arms*.

*Peng peng!*

Two of Xue Ying's phantoms were immediately destroyed.

Facing this kind of joint attack, Xue Ying immediately swept across with his spear!

*Bang bang bang!* The spear swept across horizontally and remorselessly, clashing against the many weapons of the refiner organisms and causing eight Transcendent refiner organisms to retreat.

Yet there were still 18 refiner organisms attacking him on his left, right, and above.

The spear in Xue Ying's hands lashed out.

Forcefully sweeping!

Whipping!

Smashing!

In that instant, some Transcendent refiner organisms were swept away,

whipped across, and smashed. However, there were a hundred Transcendent refiner organisms in total. If one was smacked away, another one would immediately fill in the empty spot. Furthermore, there was practically no damage inflicted onto their physical bodies, allowing them to rise up once again to joint attack Xue Ying after being swept away.

*Truly frightening.*

The dense numbers of Transcendent refiner organisms were frantically joint attacking from all sides. Even though Xue Ying smacked away groups and groups of them, more would come filling in those empty spots.

Xue Ying was being entirely surrounded at the center of the swarm! Right now, forming more illusionary images would be futile, since these Transcendent refiner organisms would just attack his original body.

*No wonder wanting to triumph over this Hundred-Battles Chamber is so tough, Xue Ying finally understood this point. Even though I've comprehended some parts of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, it's useless in this kind of situation when I'm being surrounded.*

The Extreme Piercing was something that required penetration! Piercing through! However, it did not imply that one had to stab in order to achieve it. When one smashed the entire spear, the entire spear would just be like a point of Extremity that allowed Xue Ying to utilise the Embryonic Form of his True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, killing his opponent!

However—

Extreme Piercing was not appropriate for him to perform right now.

Because currently, he was being jointly attacked from all directions. What Xue Ying needed now was to have a comprehension towards making his piercing attacks flow like water. For him to defend against 18 Transcendent refiner organisms, his horizontal sweeps, smashes, and other techniques were more focused towards the idea of 'endless'.

And the Extremity Piercing is a single-target technique.

One move to break it all!

And the desired move was something similar to flowing water. Instead of piercing, it was something akin to smashing with just a single move. This move should be powerful enough to allow him to break through the surface defences of a single Transcendent refiner organism, and it might even be able to push back three to five Transcendents. Nevertheless, even if he could smash the refiner organisms like he desired, there would always be other Transcendent organisms filling in the gap to attack Xue Ying.

True Meaning of Extreme Piercing was more suitable for one-on-one encounters.

This technique was a type of single-target piercing attack.

As Xue Ying pondered the problem within his heart, his hands busied themselves with defending.

Large groups of Transcendent refiner organisms were continuously smacked back! The spear techniques smoothly flowed from one to the next, just like a hurricane and tsunami that swept the world, majestic and mighty. Xue Ying stood at the nucleus of this planetary system. He dared not fly as being above his assailants would increase the area of possible attacks from the Transcendent refiner organisms, which would greatly increase the number of incoming threats.

Walking on the chamber's surface...

Regardless of where he trod, the Transcendent refiner organisms completely surrounded Xue Ying within a three mile radius, relentlessly attacking him.

.....

As Xue Ying fought, he was deep in thought.

*My spear's defensive techniques is clearly weaker by a whole level. Even though the Embryonic Form of True Meaning of Extreme Piercing is formidable, it isn't appropriate for defence, and neither can it allow my attacks to flow endlessly,* Xue Ying pondered how he could improve his spear techniques. A good spear technique would allow his moves to flow like water – smoothly, move by move – and allow his attacks to build in order and create a greater pressure on his enemy during battle.

If he solely depended on Extreme Piercing, the moment it lacked a connection

between one move and the next, the technique of Extreme Piercing would fail! He would have no more techniques to use.

*Extreme Piercing is just a simple attacking move.*

*What I require is a complete spear technique.*

*One that has perfect defence and endless attacks. Perfection in both defence and offense!*

*During this past year, I've thought about this topic for a very long time. I realised that in the area of defence, the Profound Mysteries of Water, Fire and Wind are not suitable. Also, even though this combination has great offensive ability through the power of Extreme Piercing, this fusion does not allow the attack to flow endlessly! And if I focus on using the Profound Mysteries of Wind and Water to allow my attacks to flow endlessly, I will not be able to perform the Extreme Piercing!*

*Regardless of how I ponder, with just water, fire and wind, I can't satisfy myself in forming the spear technique I want!*

*Since that's the case, I'll require some external assistance! It's time for me to fuse in other Profound Mysteries in order to let my spear technique reach perfection.*

Water, fire and wind allowed him to comprehend the Embryonic Form of True Meaning of Extreme Piercing and the Embryonic Form of True Meaning of Illusions. This made Xue Ying prudent as he did not dare to casually fuse other Profound Mysteries into his current water, fire and wind.

That's because he was afraid of one thing – destroying what he had already painstakingly created. With water, fire and wind... these three Profound Mysteries perfectly formed the Embryonic Form of True Meaning of Extreme Piercing. If he added another Profound Mystery that shattered this balance, he might really just eradicate the Embryonic Form of True Meaning of Extreme Piercing which he comprehended!

And that was the reason why he had been prudent with his decision.

He had some self-awareness.

Wanting to comprehend the top grade True Meaning that surpasses all other True Meanings amongst the countless worlds and even the Deity World – the grade one True Meaning – was really something extremely difficult. This was especially so when he himself had experienced the feeling of Extremity once before. Xue Ying clearly understood that comprehending Extreme Piercing himself was something really fortunate. Wanting to comprehend a True Meaning with a stage equivalent to that of the True Meaning of Extremity? The difficulty would be ten times or even a hundred times harder!

But during this past year, after seeing his spear technique stagnate, it was clear how short his technique was from perfection. The feeling was hard to endure.

Ever since childhood, he had always chased after the perfection of his spear technique!

Currently, during the battle against the hundred Transcendent refiner organisms, he finally decided to comprehend another Profound Mystery and fuse it into his technique, allowing the technique to become more perfect!

*Let's just take the risk.*

*Furthermore, the point of extremity is fundamentally the beginning of everything, and the end of all.* A frightening glint appeared within Xue Ying's eyes, *All Profound Mysteries of Myriad Existences originate from a single point, and that's the point of extremity.*

*Fusing Water, Fire, and Wind allow one to form Extreme Piercing.*

*Since all Profound Mysteries originate from the point of extremity, adding in another Profound Mystery will allow me to reach an even more perfect state. This addition should not lead to the destruction of my True Meaning of Extreme Piercing."* Xue Ying thought, *However, which Profound Mystery should I add? That's something that I must carefully decide.*

There were innumerable Profound Mysteries in the world.

He must seek for the most appropriate one out of them all!

Actually, the greater one's comprehension of the Realm was, the harder it would be to fuse in a new Profound Mystery. When one did not have a deep

comprehension it would be easier, like how Xue Ying could comprehend the Profound Mystery of Water easily after finding out that his spear technique was too fierce and hard, and lacking in softness within. This True Meaning of Water and Fire is a grade four True Meaning! Knowing that his spear technique lacked the flexibility and adaptability... he naturally found the Profound Mystery of Wind, allowing him to reach a grade two True Meaning – True Meaning of Extreme Piercing! Right now, which Profound Mystery should he fuse?

The closer he was to the peak, the harder it would get for him to take another step.

This critically important decision could not be rushed.

Only after pondering deeply on his spear technique or during a battle would he have the opportunity to find the right answer!

.....

*Hong hong hong!* The hundred Transcendent refiner organisms remorselessly attacked. They could afford to make mistakes due to their superior numbers. Xue Ying, however, could not afford to make even a single mistake, since that would involve their weapons striking his body which could very well lead to heavy injuries and defeat!

Xue Ying utilised this intense conflict as an opportunity to refine his spear technique.

This battle lasted for close to half an hour.

And such a long skirmish eventually meant that Xue Ying would make a mistake.

*Peng.*

Within the surrounding onrush of many weapons, a staff eventually smashed into Xue Ying's chest. A powerful and forceful wave penetrated through his shirt, however, the intensity reduced after passing through his protective inner vest, before entering his body. Even though his body was able to withstand the attack, he could not stop himself from flying backward.

*I still made a mistake in the end. Wanting to defend against attacks by a*

*group of Transcendents is still too tough. Let's end this!* Xue Ying fell backward...

*Shua.*

He disappeared from midair.

And twenty meters away, another black-robed Xue Ying appeared in the sky once again.

“Mn?” All the Transcendent refiner organisms were startled as they tried finding Xue Ying in the surroundings. Eventually, they saw him twenty meters away.

They could not help but be shocked with disbelief.

“How could he evade our attacks?

“Teleporting during battle?”

This group of Transcendent refiner organisms did not dare to believe it. During the fierce battle, Xue Ying's spear itself would produce ripples in space. Under the pressure of unstable ripples, wanting to teleport was an arduous task.

Xue Ying did not answer their questions. This was not teleportation; instead, his body was displaying the Embryonic Form of True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, which allowed him to pierce through all substances, including space itself!

After all, Extreme Piercing was not merely limited to just spear technique usage.

He could use it with his fingers, his fists, or his body and could similarly display the Profound Mystery of Extreme Piercing with all things.

Even though Extreme Piercing might allow him to pierce through space during battle, there was a weakness inherent within its usage, which was distance! After all, he was not teleporting. He was just piercing through space! At least for now, Xue Ying could only penetrate through approximately a hundred meters.

---

## Chapter 8 – Becoming a Saint!

---

With another movement, Xue Ying unexpectedly disappeared from mid-air before appearing behind a Transcendent refiner organisms at the edge of the group.

The silver spear immediately stabbed through its body! The refiner organism's body clearly could not withstand this attack.

*Shua.*

After pulling back his spear, Xue Ying once again disappeared and appeared at the side of another Transcendent refiner organism, stabbing them with his spear.

One on one.

Even though it was tough using the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing against a group attack, Xue Ying used Extreme Piercing on his own body, allowing him to have one-on-one battles. Naturally, he was now able to defeat these refiner organisms with one move each. After being stabbed through, the crimson-red eyes of these refiner organisms would darken and turn back into statues. This behavior was a rule set by the Xia Clan's Elders.

The moment a refiner organism's surface layer was penetrated, they were defeated and thus must stop battling.

Therefore—

In order to achieve victory in this Hundred-Battles Chamber, one had to survive an encirclement attack and penetrate through the body surface layer of each Transcendent refiner organism! Clearly, this was a huge test on different areas of battling.



Usually, ordinary peak stage Sky realm Transcendents would require the comprehension of a completed grade six True Meaning before they could break through the surface defense of a single refiner organism! Hence the difficulty of this test was huge.

*Break, break, break...*

Xue Ying's figure appeared in mid-air time after time, preventing the refiner organisms from surrounding him. One by one, they reverted back into statues.

"Defeated."

"Seems like we're going to be defeated."

"This human Transcendent is too formidable. His attacking power is too great, and he can even teleport during battle." The Transcendent refiner organisms lost their will to fight. Finally, all of them became statues.

The Hundred-Battles Chamber!

Victory!

Xue Ying revealed a wide grin. Actually, he understood after a single exchange of moves that in order for him to win this, he would have to counter the encirclement! If his own body could display the Extreme Piercing ability... then he would easily triumph over it. As a result, he was not in a rush to do it and instead, spent most of his time attempting to refine his spear techniques and perfect them in this battle.

*Fortunately, I spent another year in comprehending.* Xue Ying celebrated in his heart.

Initially, when he had just completed the Mountain Road mission and grasped hold of the Embryonic Form of True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, he could only use it with his spear thrusts or finger stabs. These actions were all of the move type of 'stab' which was how Extreme Piercing was manifested at that time.

Moves like smashing, hacking or sweeping could not yet express the ability of Extreme Piercing. Likewise, he could not utilise the True Meaning in any other way, much less with his own body.

If he were to enter the Hundred-Battles Chamber then, he would have

definitely faced defeat!

This past year gave him the chance to comprehend his techniques more deeply and perfect his own control. Everything could become a point of extremity, piercing through all things. Weapons could be a point of extremity, and his own body could as well. Likewise, even the rustling leaves could be turned into a point of extremity!

A grade two True Meaning was extremely terrifying even in its Embryonic Form.

“Haha, good, good, very beautiful” laughter suddenly resounded within the Hundred-Battles Chamber.

Xue Ying turned towards the source, only to see a black-haired old man standing and chuckling.

“Greetings, Palace Head,” Xue Ying immediately greeted Palace Head Chen, who was in front of him. Actually, the moment Xue Ying entered the chamber, the Infernal Palace treasure spirit had informed its master. Thus, Palace Head Chen had viewed the entire battle! After watching the combat scenes, he had become extremely excited.

“This grade two True Meaning is certainly formidable, with its Embryonic Form being so powerful. You can even easily penetrate through space during a fight” The black-haired old man praised. “In the future, when you fully grasp the True Meaning, you will reach a stage which even I cannot fully comprehend! Back when Eternal Wind first grasped hold of the grade three True Meaning of Void Cleavage, he was able to match the might of Demigods, and even defeated the Demigod Feng Dong. I believe that your combat power will be even more formidable than his after you’ve fully grasped hold of your True Meaning. Spend your time cultivating and comprehending the complete True Meaning as soon as possible. At that time, even if your abilities become known to the public, no one will be able to threaten you! For now though, you still need to stay low-key. Since you have successfully defeated the Hundred-Battles Chamber, 100,000 contribution points will be given to you, though this victory will temporarily be kept a secret.”

“I understand,” Xue Ying replied.

Even though he was quite powerful right now...

In front of those Demigods with their devastating power, he was still much weaker and had to depend on the two protective treasures given by the Xia Clan to survive.

During the period of time before he grasped hold of the complete True Meaning, he would be relatively weak. As such, he had to be more prudent in his actions.

“Finding and killing the hidden demons can be considered a form of training for you,” Palace Head Chen laughed. “Alright, go out and fight. Only during battle will your improvements be at their fastest! Quickly, completely comprehend the grade two True Meaning. I am extremely anxious to see that day arrive.”

.....

After returning home from the Hundred-Battles Chamber, everything remained as it was, with no news or information being released regarding Xue Ying’s success. He reached his mansion just in time to have a breakfast with his family.

Being together with his family members, Xue Ying’s current mood was really good. One hundred thousand contribution points would certainly greatly increase his own physical power as well as Snowrock Castle’s power greatly.

“Master, Mage Yu Jing Qiu has arrived,” a maidservant announced.

Mo Yang Yu immediately said, “Let Mage Yu Jing Qiu come in and have breakfast with us.”

“Eating together?” Xue Ying was stunned. As Transcendents, they did not have to consume meals. He himself only ate meals with his family because he wanted to enjoy spending time with them.

“She’s not an outsider after all,” Mo Yang Yu smiled sweetly.

“Right, not an outsider,” Dong Bo Lie laughed too. After staying here in the Xia Capital for the a whole year, everyone saw Xue Ying and Jing Qiu frequently going out together. They could sense how close these two people were. Mo Yang Yu

and her husband had even started to faintly treat Jing Qiu as their daughter-in-law. Even though Jing Qiu was older than Xue Ying by three years, everyone was still quite pleased with this relationship.

The lifespan of Transcendents were extremely long. Finding someone with just a three year age gap was something worth celebrating. Furthermore, they were even from the same county and had fallen in love with one another.

Soon, Jing Qiu arrived.

“Mage Jing Qiu, please have a seat,” Mo Yang Yu said politely. Even though she faintly considered Jing Qiu as her daughter-in-law, Jing Qiu was, after all, still a Transcendent mage.

“Greetings Marquis, Marchioness” Jing Qiu politely replied before sitting next to Xue Ying. Giving him a look, she transmitted, “How was it? Did you succeed?”

“Mn, I’ve succeeded,” Xue Ying replied. “But this news has to be kept secret. You are the only one I’ve told.”

“Triumphing over the Hundred-Battles Chamber as a Sky realm Transcendent younger than sixty years of age is such a big matter, yet it must be kept a secret. After your battle, you even came home to accompany your family members to have breakfast peacefully,” Jing Qiu transmitted back. There was an expression of delight on her face. Clearly, Xue Ying had only told her, and nobody else, making her feel special.

Xue Ying suddenly exclaimed, “Tonight, I’ll be entering closed-door cultivation for up to two days.”

“Closed-door cultivation?” Everyone looked at him inquisitively.

“Mn. A month from now, we’ll have to leave Xia Capital and travel back to our homeland. While we are there, we will be facing against the threats of demons, so I need to use this opportunity now to breakthrough to Saint realm,” Xue Ying explained. The moment he broke through to the Saint realm, he would not be able to keep that breakthrough a secret. The aura he emitted from his body would certainly be completely different. Xue Ying did not think of hiding this fact from his loved ones.

“Saint realm Transcendent?” His own brother Qing Shi exclaimed, “Wa, big

brother, you've cultivated only for how long and yet, you're already becoming a Saint realm Transcendent. So formidable."

"Disciple brother Xue Ying should be the youngest Saint Transcendent in the past 1000 years," Jing Qiu added.

At this table, other than Xue Ying and Jing Qiu, there were his parents, Uncle Tong and his family, Zong Tu, his brother and his brother's girlfriend, and the two other lovers.

His little brother's girlfriend was called Dai Ya, and she was someone famous in the External Wind Academy. She and her sister, Dai Lu, were relatively beautiful. Both sisters were of Meteor rank. As it was relatively rare for twin sisters to also be Meteor mages, they were celebrities at the Eternal Wind Academy.

The other pair of lovers were Dai Lu and her boyfriend, Kong Yuan Feng.

Qing Shi had a Transcendent brother, and he himself was a Silver Moon mage. As for Kong Yuan Feng, who had successfully chased after the older sister Dai Lu, he was someone with ability. As a student under the Transcendent mage Zi Che Gu Feng, he was also, a Silver Moon mage. His most outstanding accomplishment was in the area of flesh and soul, where he had demonstrated a high understanding. Another well-known person who was similarly investigating in this area, the Si Clan old ancestor Si Liang Hong, had released a public announcement that stated Kong Yuan Feng had long surpassed her in the study of the flesh and soul!

"Too formidable," The sisters, Dai Lu and Dai Ya, along with Kong Yuan Feng were all startled.

They were geniuses in the Eternal Wind Academy. However, reaching this Xia Capital, there were large numbers of Legend Knights and mages.

As for the mansion they lived in, there was Xue Ying, Jing Qiu and the little disciple brother Yuan Qing. All of these were people worthy of looking up to.

Yuan Qing was even younger than they were, and he had already become a Transcendent!

Xue Ying was an even more frightening character! Previously, he was proclaimed as the number one Sky realm Transcendent in the entire Xia Capital,

and he had the power to match up against Saint Transcendents. Now, he was becoming a Saint Transcendent at such a young age. Most likely, in the future, he would become a Demigod!

Adoration! Admiration!

Those were currently the feelings of little brother Qing Shi, the sisters, Dai Lu and Dai Ya, and Kong Yuan Feng

.....

That night.

Xue Ying entered a quiet room, closing the door shut. The fire crystal lamps were brightly lit. In the spacious and quiet room, there was just Xue Ying seated cross-legged in silence.

He held onto an Origin Stone weighing over half a kilogram. At the same time, his mind was immersed in his own Dantian Qi sea. With a thought, the Transcendent Qi which had long been transformed to its peak but was forcibly prevented from reaching the next stage, started its rebirth... allowing Xue Ying to enter the next realm...

---

## Chapter 9 – Leaving Xia Capital

---

Inside the Dantian Qi Sea, countless flame-red mist, formed from the accumulation of Xue Ying's Transcendent Qi, illuminated the space. This red mist was formed after consuming more than 250 kilograms of Origin Stone. After using the Profound Mysteries to completely absorb the energy provided by the Origin Stone, the mist had turned red as it was completely saturated, and was overflowing into Xue Ying's consciousness.

*Chi chi chi.*

With a thought from Xue Ying, the countless flame-red Qi started to change. Strands of electric-like rays appeared within the red mist.

The electric strands flittered about, scuttling like electric serpents.

In a rapid transformation, the red, flame-like mist transformed and compressed itself to a higher density, increasing the power! Every electric-like strand that formed devoured a large quantity of the mist.

All of Xue Ying's Qi quickly transformed.

As the countless red flame Qi instantly turned into threads, they tangled together, forming a crystal sphere. The sphere then slowly turned into a miniature Xue Ying. After that transformation, the sphere changed again into a small dragon. Each transformation was very realistic and vivid in its expression. Occasionally a brilliant light would appear on a form's skin, differentiating it from an actual entity.

*After stepping into the Saint realm, a Transcendent's Qi is really different, Xue Ying thought. Condensed Qi can be used to shape and form a Qi avatar!*

"I must nourish my body and soul first."

Xue Ying calmed his heart and no longer pondered about the new changes within himself.

Electric serpent-like Qi strands penetrated his skin, flesh and bones... then burrowed into his internal organs and finally into his brain, nourishing his soul.

Nourishing the soul with his new Saint Transcendent Qi took the longest time. Becoming a Saint Transcendent allowed Xue Ying to form a Qi avatar, which required a Saint Transcendent to split a well nourished soul. Therefore, Saint Transcendents usually took their time to slowly nourish their souls, but Xue Ying needed to feed his soul as quickly as possible! He needed to be able to split his soul before he left Xia Capital as he would have to go to various places.

Xue Ying wanted to use his Qi avatar to stay at Snowrock Castle to protect his clan!

During this war with demons, he didn't dare to neglect his clan in the slightest. Otherwise, if something went awry, it would be too late for regrets.

.....

One by one, Xue Ying consumed many Origin Stones weighing more than a half kilogram each to nourish his soul.

After consuming an additional nineteen stones, Xue Ying finally felt a halt in his soul's growth. He knew further consumption would have no effect in nourishing his Transcendent Qi .

*Hu*

Xue Ying opened his eyes.

"Saint realm Transcendent?" Xue Ying grinned as he gazed at his side.

*Hua-*

A flame-red light flew out of Xue Ying's body and appeared by his side. The light quickly condensed into a red-robed, black-haired, youthful-looking man that appeared exactly same as the Saint Transcendent Xue Ying. The only difference was the faint light flickering on its face, skin, and hair. With a glance, people would know that this figure was not a real flesh and blood body! Instead, this Transcendent was simply the condensation of Qi into a human form.



*Splitting one's soul is really uncomfortable,* thought Xue Ying. *Fortunately only a small part of the soul separates, causing little impact to the original's strength.*

Fortunately, Xue Ying was not a mage. Mages had to rely on their spirit strength when battling, so there was a bigger impact from dividing their soul. However, knights relied on their Qi, weapons, secret techniques, realm comprehension, and other factors when fighting. Splitting off a shred of their soul would have little impact on their fighting prowess.

“I definitely can't let my Qi avatar be exterminated,” said Xue Ying while looking at his Qi avatar standing in front of him.

*If my Qi avatar is destroyed...* Thought Xue Ying. *The part of my soul that created the avatar will disappear, deeply damaging my vitality. I will need to spend time and resources recovering what I lost.* This fact was recorded in the books Xue Ying had read. After a Saint Transcendent's soul separates, both parts were still linked together. If a part of the soul inside a Qi avatar was destroyed, the Transcendent's soul core would be injured as well.

Even though the destruction of a Qi avatar could be considered a small injury, the damage would still affect the soul core of the Transcendent. This damage was different from when a mage has depleted their spirit strength and soul force in battle. That expenditure was only an external part of a mage's strength and not the core. Even if a mage completely spent this kind of strength, they could still recover it quickly.

But if the soul core of a Transcendent was harmed, even only a minuscule part, the recovery would be very slow.

If the soul core was heavily injured, that person could become intellectually impaired or even driven insane! If the soul core injury was grave enough, that person could die.

The impact of a damaged soul core also affected Demigods... if a Demigod used a Qi avatar to explore dangerous places and lost it, resulting in the damage of their soul core, their first priority and only option would be to retreat and slowly recover. Only after a full recovery could they use their Qi avatar again. A Demigod didn't dare to immediately send a Qi avatar out for the second time

after losing one without a full recovery first.

This fact about Qi avatars was common knowledge.

*I've consumed Origin Stones so quickly* Xue Ying thought as he looked at the amount of Origin Stones left in his hand. *'From the initial stage to the peak stage, I needed more than 1,500 kilograms of Origin Stone! To reach Demigod, how much more would I need? Fortunately I don't need to worry about Origin Stones right now.*

*I still need another 5000 kilograms of Origin Stone to solidify my cultivation at the Saint realm. I need to ensure that I have it prepared,* thought Xue Ying.

The cost of improving a Primordial Bloodline was extremely high and the difficulty level was immense, such that an improvement was nearly impossible. After having successfully completed the Hundred-Battle Chamber challenge, Xue Ying had enough resources to wantonly absorb Origin Stones, increasing his power and breaking through to the Saint Transcendent realm. However, he did not dare to think about trying to use Origin Stones to improve his Primordial Bloodline.

.....

Spring, year 9663, early morning.

Numerous people passed through the world door that was located on a majestic and high mountain outside of the Xia Capital.

"Disciple brother Dong Bo."

"Congratulations, congratulations! Disciple brother Dong Bo is so young and has already become a Saint Transcendent. You've really made people envious and jealous," they said upon greeting him.

In the middle of the sky.

Some Transcendents flying in the sky had brought their family members, waiting to pass through the world door to return home. While they waited, they also greeted others.

Within half a month, news about Xue Ying becoming a Saint Transcendent had already spread. This news surprised many Xia Capital Transcendents and many of

them marveled at Xue Ying's prowess. He was so young. Even though he had become a Transcendent in his twenties, what really made people marvel was that he was also able to become Saint Transcendent prior to reaching sixty years of age. This fact caused many of those old fellows stuck at the Sky realm for hundreds of years to be unable to bear their chagrin.

"We'll start now. The Water Daoist Faction may enter," Palace Head Chen from Infernal Palace stood beside the world door, personally taking charge.

Today, all Legend rank mages and knights, Transcendents under the Demigod rank would, without exception, have to go out into the Xia World! This requirement was a huge matter and definitely couldn't be affected by the demons.

*Hua, hua, hua...*

Numerous Legend rankers from Water Daoist Faction entered the door.

"Everyone, I will go first. If there's time, find me at Azure River County," said Xue Ying, waving goodbye to his friends. These friends were Transcendents with whom he had taken the same missions and faced dangerous battles together. Some were even fellow disciples from Scarlet Cloud Mountain.

"Jing Qiu, let's go," together with Jing Qiu, Xue Ying took their family members and flew towards the world door.

Numerous figures passed through the world door.

Xue Ying and Yu Jing Qiu also took their family members and flew through the world door.

"How lively."

At the Dragon Mountain Empire's northmost Great Snowy Plain, the Water Daoist Faction, that was usually quiet, was really lively that early morning from the arrival of the many Legend rankers and Transcendents.

"Everyone."

A vigorous voice resounded throughout whole daoist temple.

Everyone raised their head to looked at an azure-robed man who exuded a powerful pressure. He was the Faction Head, Si Kong Yang.

“Starting tomorrow, Transcendent and Legend rankers must comply with the order to chase and kill demons,” Si Kong Yang continued. “All of you should use today to prepare. There are two hours left before you need to be ready. You can use this time to exchange secret techniques, weapons, and other treasures. After the next two hours, our Water Daoist Faction will send you out. Okay, begin preparing.”

“Understood,” All the Transcendents and Legend rankers answered respectfully while their family members held their breaths, not daring to make any sounds. That invisible pressure from Si Kong Yang was too frightening.

Transcendents and Legend rankers exchanged items they deemed necessary whilst their family members temporarily rested inside the daoist temple.

Since it was inevitable that they would fight with demons while tracking them in the future, it was natural that they would exchange contribution points for things that could add to their personal strength. As for people who regarded their clans highly, they also needed to exchange items and contribution points for powerful arrays for their clan’s protection.

“I will set aside 50,000 contribution points and the rest will be exchanged for a weapon and magic arrays,” Xue Ying had already decided earlier how he would divvy up his earned points. “I will also exchange an additional 50,000 contribution points for more Origin Stones!”

“Ancestor Dragon, Ancestor Sparrow, I want to exchange my points for a Demigod weapon,” Xue Ying spoke in a manner such that other than his intended listeners, those surrounding him were unable to hear his request.

The Weaponry Pavilion only had Human and Saint rank weapons.

As for a Demigod weapon? Such a precious item was kept in a place known only to a select few.

Those who had not yet reached the Saint realm were not even eligible to look at Demigod items.

“Not bad, brat. Last time when old dragon and I first met you, you had just become a Transcendent. Now, after such a short time, you are already a Saint Transcendent and even have enough contribution points for a Demigod

weapon?” The Water Daoist Faction spirit, Ancestor Sparrow’s voice sounded in Xue Ying’s ear. “Fine, I will take you there.”

---

# Chapter 10 – Demigod Treasures

---

A strand of energy wrapped around Xue Ying, causing space itself to distort. Xue Ying did not resist the energy even though he could clearly use his Extreme Piercing to forcibly break out!

His surroundings changed.

Xue Ying was transferred from a field of grass to standing in an enclosed hall.

This hall was completely sealed, with several fire crystal lamps lighting up the place. Powerful Demigod Treasures were displayed within. There were also some relatively powerful mage items, unique treasures, and powerful array formations.

“Substitute Elder Dong Bo.” There was already a Saint Transcendent in the hall.

“Elder Ning.” Xue Ying recognised this person who had a divine sword on his back as someone called Ning Nan. Right now, he was ranked 25th in the Saint rankings.

The two of them briefly greeted each other before continuing their search for treasures.

Xue Ying walked on within the hall while examining the treasures. In the future, when he went to battle against the demons, he would primarily need a protective robe! When his own weapon could not parry the attacks, a high-quality robe could possibly save his life. After that, the next important item would be a good spear.

*This is quite good.*

After looking at all the various Demigod rank robes, he finally chose one of

them—

Xue Ying read the description: *Water-Fire Cloud Robe. Refined by a Demigod great mage who comprehended the True Meaning of Water and Fire. He spent more than ten years refining it, utilising the Profound Mystery of Waves that was part of the True Meaning of Water and Fire in constructing the spell model to refine this robe. The moment this spell is activated, there will be unseen waves emitted from the robe to protect the wearer and separate them from all attacks. peak stage Saint realm Transcendents will barely be able to pierce through the protective waves, and even if they do pierce through this robe, the power of their attacks will be weakened tremendously.*

It was a Mid-Grade Demigod Rank treasure! And its cost was 32,000 contribution points!

*This is it.* Xue Ying picked up the robe and tried it on. The material used to craft this robe was extraordinary, and Demigods themselves would certainly be unable to destroy it! However, some powerful explosive force would still be able to bypass it and reach his body. Furthermore, attacks were usually targeted on one's face and throat, which this robe did not protect.

If he were to be attacked at his face or throat, he would have to depend on this robe's unseen wave for protection.

*Waves from the True Meaning of Water and Fire?* Xue Ying activated the spell.

Water embodies the ripples of waves.

Fire embodies the spread of fire waves.

That Demigod great mage's True Meaning of Water and Fire had reached a peak attainment which had almost reached the stage of condensing a True Deity Heart. His specialty was in the area of waves, enabling him to refine this Demigod treasure. Demigod treasures... were not something any ordinary Demigod mage could refine.

*So formidable, intertwining both water and fire to such an extent as if they were twins. The waves formed are used to stack upon one another, making it very mysterious and unpredictable.* The moment Xue Ying activated the spell, he could feel a layer of dense waves on the surface of his body. These waves were

extremely mysterious. Being quite well-learned in the area of water and fire, he was able to easily activate the spell. However, with his current comprehension, he was still quite far from understanding the model.

*Regardless of the type of incoming attacks, they should be weakened by these undulating waves, causing the power of those attacks to be greatly reduced. These waves can even match the power of a peak stage Saint Transcendent,* Xue Ying nodded in his mind.

Even though there were other, much better protective robes, Xue Ying knew that treasures related to defense were originally extremely expensive. Spending 32,000 contribution points for this robe was already considered expensive.

If he owned this robe, he would be able to casually attack even while facing it head on.

No Transcendents below the peak stage of Saint realm would be able to hurt him in any way! As for peak stage Saint Transcendents, they would barely be able to pierce through the layer of waves. With such powerful defenses, when the attacks did reach him, the force would be exhausted. The threat brought to him by the top ten rankers within the Saint rankings would thus be reduced by half.

.....

*As for a spear, I'll choose this.* Xue Ying quickly found the spear that he wanted.

In a battle with demons, having a good weapon was a must.

As with the robe, Xue Ying read the description attached to the spear. *Stellar Firecloud Spear: The spearhead is refined from Stellar Stones collected from the Deity World, and the spear shaft refined from Firecloud Metal. With such extraordinary materials, it was left behind by a guest from the Otherworld after dying. It weighs 7,500 kilograms, with no other exceptional qualities aside from its sharpness.*

A Mid-Grade Demigod rank treasure that costs 30,000 contribution points!

*Such a waste,* Xue Ying thought. *Firecloud Metal, Deity World Stellar-Stone... the materials used are so extravagant. If only it was refined by an extremely powerful mage with some spell matrices engraved it. For instance, having a*



*spell to create illusions, or to increase the speed of spear techniques, or maybe incorporating some frightening poisonous effect on it... who would have thought that not a single spell model was refined into it.*

That's right.

This was a spear with entirely no evidence of magical array formations. It was given such a grade simply because of the materials used in refining it! Just the Deity World Stellar-Stones alone would give it a price more exorbitant than the materials used to make other Mid-Grade Demigod rank treasures.

It was a pity that this was a fully refined Demigod treasure, thus no one would be able to deconstruct it in order to obtain the Deity World Stellar-Stones.

The only advantage this weapon had was that the Deity World Stellar-Stones were used to refine the spearhead, giving it an incomparable sharpness! Because it was extremely sharp, it was given the rank of Mid-Grade Demigod weapon. Its price was exorbitant too. Usually, attacking-type treasures were cheaper than defending-type of treasures, yet this spear had a price similar to the defensive-type robe.

*What I've seen in this spear is precisely its sharpness, Xue Ying revealed a grin. 'Extreme Piercing can certainly pair up with this spear's superior sharpness! Who could block my piercing after using this spear?*

.....

Xue Ying paid the contribution points for the items.

The total cost of the Water-Fire Cloud Robe, the Stellar Firecloud Spear, and three sets of powerful array formations added up to a total of 79,000 contribution points.

That was more than what he had planned to spend by more than 10,000 contribution points.

After all, exchanging points for such treasures was something that could never be estimated accurately! So what if he overspent? By chasing and killing more demons... he could still earn more rewards. Furthermore, this Stellar Firecloud Spear was a must since it greatly increased his own combat power!

\*\*\*\*\*

The Transcendents and Legend rankers of Water Daoist Faction had completed their exchange for treasures. Once it was noon, everyone started departing.

“Board the ship.”

A gigantic flying ship descended at the entrance of the Water Daoist Faction temple. With his white hair fluttering about, Chi Qiu Bai stood on top of the battleship. Sending the various Transcendents and Legend rankers back to their hometown was his responsibility. With the True Meaning of Void Cleavage, and being a Demigod... sending them back quickly and safely was a task he was expected to be good at.

“This is the route we’ll be taking, later on, Transcendents. I’ll send each and everyone of you back. As for Legend rankers... look at the routes carefully to decide where you will disembark” Chi Qiu Bai said.

A huge map displaying various routes was posted next to the entrance of the battleship.

Within the five provinces, many places were marked, showing where the ship would be stopping at.

Everyone briefly looked through and thought of where they would want to disembark.

“Disciple brother Xue Ying,” Jing Qiu was startled at hearing how much Xue Ying had spent on his items. “You’ve spent 17,000 contribution points buying arrays? Such a huge price... I believe that each of the array formations should delay Demigods for some time, and no one below the realm of Demigods can break through such an array. Actually, there’s no need to purchase such a good array. Spending 5,600 contribution points should be enough to buy a sufficient array. Arrays are totally different from mage equipment.”

Indeed they were different.

Mage equipment was a smaller scale version of an array, and mage equipment was also portable.

Arrays were placed permanently without any mobility. Furthermore, the area

encompassed by array formations was huge. As a result, the difficulty in placing arrays can be seen. An array that costs 17,000 contribution points could purchase mage equipment worth tens of thousands of contribution points.

As arrays were powerful and relatively less expensive than mage equipment, in many provinces and counties there would usually be some huge arrays laid out within them.

“I’m satisfied with what I spent on the arrays. By the way, Jing Qiu, I see that the plans for chasing after the demons have been passed down to us. Are you assigned to the first half of the year or the second half of the year?” Xue Ying asked. Every Transcendent must seek and kill the demons, but it was impossible for them to always be on the search. According to the plan, every Transcendent would have to commit half a year of their time to this mission.

It was a unified deployment plan put in place by the Infernal Palace.

Half of the Transcendents would work the first half of the year, while the other half of the Transcendents would work the latter half of the year. This plan allowed them to take turns in searching for demons.

And the half-year period during which they rested could be used to peacefully cultivate.

“I’m assigned to the first half of the year,” Jing Qiu laughed. “Tomorrow is the day when I need to start finding demons to kill. What about you?”

“I’m also assigned to the first half,” Xue Ying smiled. “It seems that today, I’ll have to trouble you in helping me set up the arrays.”

“These are all fully-built arrays. All you have to do is place them into formation. It’s quite simple. Half an hour should be enough time,” Jing Qiu nodded.

The two of them leaned against the window, chatting with one another. They isolated themselves so that their sounds would not leak out. Nobody disturbed them.

After all, there were only so many Transcendents within the ship.

Half an hour later after leaving Water Daoist Faction.

“Next stop, Tranquil Sun Province, Azure River County, Water Rites Town,” Chi

Qiu Bai's voice resounded. "Those who are disembarking, please get ready to leave."

After saying those words, Chi Qiu Bai turned to look at Xue Ying.

Xue Ying and Jing Qiu both stood up.

As they were walking onto the front deck...

"Xue Ying, you must be careful in the future," Chi Qiu Bai transmitted a message. "Don't try to be too brave! The comprehension of your True Meaning is more important."

"Mn, big brother Eternal Wind. You must be careful too. We must never look down upon the demons," Xue Ying replied.

The two of them briefly chatted for a while.

The battleship tore through space, coming out of the void. Overlooking the scenery below, the battleship hovered over the highest mountain amongst a chain of mountains. This location was none other than Snowrock Mountain where the Snowrock Castle was built.

"Snowrock Castle," Xue Ying revealed a smile. This was the place where he had grown up, and naturally, the place for which he had deep feelings.

---

# Chapter 11 – Hometown

---

Snowrock Castle bustled with excitement and activity. Their marquis, marchioness and two young masters had returned. The castle's inhabitants especially looked forward to meeting the rumoured young master, Dong Bo Xue Ying, who was a legendary Transcendent!

*Hu.*

Xue Ying walked along the peak of the mountain. He breathed in deeply, taking in the earthly scent of the soil. He smiled as a sharp bite of coldness filled his lungs.

This was the smell of home! The place where he had grown up!

The season was early spring. Since Water Rites Town was located close to the northernmost part of the continent as well as the Great Snowy Plains, a large area of the peak still had snow accumulated. Xue Ying deliberately creating crunching sounds with each of his steps as he walked across the snow. Even though he chose to crunch through the snow, the Dong Bo Clan's servants and guards had already swept the main road clear of snow.

"Greetings, Master Xue Ying", an old man garbed in white met with him, smiling and bowing respectfully.

"Mage Bai Yuan Zhi," Xue Ying laughed. "It seems you haven't changed much since the last time I saw you."

"Master Xue Ying, you are the one who hasn't changed much. You're still as young as ever," Bai Yuan Zhi replied. He had watched Xue Ying transform with his own eyes, from a relatively extraordinary teenager into an existence he himself could not even imagine. For many years now, Mage Bai Yuan Zhi, had borrowed resources from the Dong Bo Clan which allowed him to reach the

Silver Moon rank.

After all, the Dong Bo Clan had achieved its position as the number one clan in the Azure River County and was ranked amongst the top three most powerful clans in the Tranquil Sun Province.

“Disciple Brother Xue Ying,” a soft voice sounded. Jing Qiu arrived beside Xue Ying in two steps.

“Greetings Mage Yu,” Bai Yuan Zhi addressed Jing Qiu respectfully. For some time now, he had known of the other female Transcendent mage originating from Azure River County.

“Jing Qiu, this is Mage Bai Yuan Zhi,” Xue Ying introduced. “The next time you visit to cultivate, it would be great if you would show him some pointers.”

“Certainly,” Jing Qiu smiled at Bai Yuan Zhi. “Mage Bai, after I finish building my Mage Manor, you may occasionally visit me there.”

“Thank you Master Xue Ying. Thank you Mage Yu,” Bai Yuan Zhi said. He was quite excited by the invitation.

With three Legend rankers and several tens of Silver Moon rankers, the current Dong Bo Clan had a powerful battling force. Amongst them, Bai Yuan Zhi was not considered a shining, outstanding talent amongst this force. His special status was solely due to the fact that he knew Xue Ying from Xue Ying’s youth. Likewise, Bai Yuan Zhi taught Qing Shi. Therefore, these achievements gave him a special status.

After interacting briefly for a sentence or two, Xue Ying and Jing Qiu continued on, side by side.

“So this is where you grew up?” Jing Qiu curiously looked around her.

“Mn. Breathing in the air here makes me feel different. I feel like I’m home,” Xue Ying walked ahead with extreme familiarity. “Oh yes, have you finished setting up the arrays?”

“It’s an extremely easy task,” Jing Qiu nodded. “The entire peak of Snowrock Mountain is covered within the area of the array. With these three big arrays, I’m certain that no demons will dare to attack.”

Jing Qiu gazed curiously at Xue Ying.

She felt Xue Ying's attachment and feelings for this land. She looked around her, studying the place where her love grew up.

.....

晚宴，很是隆重。

The dinner that night was extremely grand, as Xue Ying and Jing Qiu would be leaving the next day

"I have something important to say," Xue Ying stated after dinner. At his words, the entire Dong Bo Clan and Yu Clan quieted down. After all, a Saint Transcendent was addressing them!

"I'm glad all of you have been able to come home from the Infernal World. While it might be relatively safer over there, living there is not good for mortals. There is very little to do in the Infernal World. We Transcendents can live there and chase after our own goals. Yet for mortals, the Infernal World is really just a prison," Xue Ying laughed. "Now that we are back in the mortal world, it's time for all of you to flex some of your muscles."

At that moment, everyone laughed.

That was right.

Both the Dong Bo Clan and the Yu Clan were clans with Transcendents! How important were they in the mortal world? In the Xia Capital, the mortals from these clans could do nothing but hold themselves back. The Infernal World held so many Legend rankers, and the entire place housed more than half of the Xia Clan's Transcendents. For a mere mortal, living in the Infernal World was like living the life of a rice insect. There were very few entertainment outlets for mortals. The days would be extremely boring, and living there meant wasting their lives away!

"Even though the danger is greater in the mortal world, it's still okay! During this past year, the battle between our Xia Clan and the demons has reached its apex. Currently, the demons have learnt their lesson and are hiding in nooks and

crannies of the world. Even after searching for a long period of time, our Xia Clan's Demigods couldn't find a single demon. As a result, they've decided to send us Transcendents back to assist them in searching for the demons," Xue Ying laughed loudly. "They are really good at hiding! This shows that the battle between our Xia Clan and the demons has transformed from frontal assault to a seek and find conflict! The more they hide, the less of a threat they are to mortals. Thus, this is currently the best period of time for everyone to return.

"There are several places which are extremely safe.

"One of the safe havens is my Snowrock Castle! I dare to say that those Abyss Demons would not dare to attack here! Maybe some peak demons might be able to break through the arrays, but they would still need a long time to break through the arrays. During this period of time, you can send messages for help. Within the time of a single breath, there will be human Demigods rushing over to aid you!" Xue Ying laughed. "Thus, all of you can rest assured. I've read through countless books of our Xia Clan's history, and I dare to say that these demons are extremely cunning, prudent, and selfish! They will not dare to gamble with their lives! The chance of this location facing an attack from a Demigod demon... is smaller than the chance for a gold piece to drop down from the heavens.

"Another safe place will be the Eternal Wind Academy. It is the location of the Knight of Eternal Wind. Qing Shi, since you and your friends are part of the Eternal Wind Academy, you are allowed entry into the academy.

"But the most important safe haven for all of you is still be the province!

"Even when the demons first started their invasion, none of them dared to charge into the provinces," Xue Ying continued. "Every single one of the 19 Xia Clan's provinces have had their defenses reinforced over many generations. Each province now has many sets of arrays protecting them! There are even more powerful arrays protecting the provinces than here at my Snowrock Castle. The moment a Demigod demon attacks those places, the arrays will be triggered, and the Demigod demons will not be able to escape! As for the weaker demons... they would certainly die when facing the arrays.

"These three places are extremely safe.

"The next safest area would be the country. Their arrays are relatively



formidable as well, and you can always travel to the country if you want to. Only the most powerful demons will dare to ignore the power of those arrays” Xue Ying said. “All right. Now that I’ve explained to you all about the safe places, I expect that in the future, the activities of my Dong Bo Clan and your Yu Shi Clan will be dependent on your own decisions.”

“Yes.”

“Thank you Master Dong Bo.”

The Yu Shi Clan members immediately expressed their gratitude. They were all extremely pleased and happy to see their own clan’s Jing Qiu getting close to Xue Ying.

In their eyes, Jing Qiu was an extremely beautiful female Transcendent mage, and Xue Ying was someone who had become a Saint Transcendent after cultivating for only a short period of time, with the hope of becoming a Demigod! Of course they supported their relationship.

“Brother, I’m bored at home. I’ll be going with Ya-er and the rest back to the Eternal Wind Academy,” Xue Ying’s little brother, Qing Shi, said.

“All right,” Xue Ying did not try to stop him. Even though Qing Shi might seem young, in reality, he was reaching 50 years of age. Of course, comparing his current age to his lifespan of 200 years, he was still relatively young. The battle with demons might last for even more than a thousand years. Xue Ying definitely did not want to see his little brother live the life of a rice insect for the rest of his life.

.....

The Dong Bo Clan and Yu Shi Clan, which were both clans at the apex, once again received their regional power and authority after returning from the Infernal World.

Everything returned to normal in the Xia Clan’s World.

Of course... this was attributed to the fact that there would always be human Transcendents chasing and killing demons. The human Demigods stationed themselves in various regions of the world. This arrangement allowed them to always be on guard and have the ability to rush to the aid of anyone in their

region! Precisely because of this immense Transcendent pressure, the close-to-ten-thousand remaining demons had decided to hide. The deeper the demons hid, the less active they became. Hiding like this was their safest option. After all, the demons who dared to take risks would certainly be killed by the humans!

“Let’s part our ways here.”

It was dawn of the second day.

In the air above Snowrock Mountain, Xue Ying and Jing Qiu Smiled at each other. Two Transcendents travelling together to chase after any traces of demons would be too conspicuous and inefficient. In any case, the Infernal Palace had already forbidden such a situation.

“Disciple brother Xue Ying, you must take care of yourself,” Jing Qiu said.

“You too,” Xue Ying replied.

Soon, the two went their different ways.

Jing Qiu turned into a stream and flew towards the southern part of the region.

As for Xue Ying, he flew towards the western end of Water Rites Town.

---

# Chapter 12 – Meeting Kong You Yue

## Coincidentally

---

The provinces were safe, while the counties and important locations of the Transcendent Clans were quite safe as well. Since the demons knew that the Xia Clan's Transcendents were currently searching for them, they usually steered away from these places.

Then which locations were the most dangerous?

Many densely populated cities and villages still existed outside of the protected areas. Any random demon could act as they wanted in such places. Those living in these cities and villages could not threaten the demons' lives. After all... the entire Xia Clan's World was too big. It was so large that the number of population centers within the fundamental clan counties couldn't all be protected by arrays. They did not have enough resources for that!

*Xiu.*

How fast was Xue Ying's speed with his current ability? With the Embryonic Form of Extreme Piercing, his manipulation of World Energy swept away his fleshly body... His speed was so terrifying that when compared with new Transcendents, it was way out of their league.

Traveling from Snowrock Castle to Water Rites Town would not even take the time to breathe once before Xue Ying would reach his destination.

*After so many years, the Water Rites Town still remained the same, Xue Ying thought as he walked around the town.*

The Water-Fire Cloud Robe on his body transformed into an ordinary black robe.

Likewise, Xue Ying transformed his external features, reshaping his face into that of another man's likeness. Without a doubt, the demons he pursued would instantly recognize him if they had studied about human Transcendents. Naturally, he had to hide himself.

*Hua-*

Borrowing strength from the World Energy, he extended his soul power to spread over an area fifty kilometers in diameter.

Within this area, Xue Ying's energy covered the entire Water Rites Town. He was able to observe the millions of people living within this area. Nothing escaped his scrutiny. From the minor street tussles, bloody acts in the dark, close and personal physical acts, and even those diligently cultivation, none could escape his vigilant gaze. Xue Ying's soul power was so immense that it could easily resolve any conflicts.

"Boss, give me something to eat," Xue Ying had casually found a restaurant, picked a corner to sit in, and ordered some breakfast.

He ate his meal slowly.

At the same time, he was searching for the demons...

In reality, his mission was quite relaxed. Anyone who was searching for demons only needed to travel to different locations, eat and drink their fill, and could also enjoy the entertainments of the mortal world. As long as they frequently borrowed the strength of the World Energy to observe the surrounding areas, — they would already be deemed as diligent in performing their mission!

The Transcendents searching for the demons had no control over where to search. The demons had hidden themselves extremely well. Just as the Transcendents could transform their bodies into water streams, or become spheres... these Abyss Demons could likewise transform themselves! An Abyss Demon could easily reconstruct its body into a human figure. Furthermore, since these demons had matured within the Dark Abyss, they had methods of hiding their own auras as well.

Because these demons could transform their exterior appearances and

completely hide their auras, it was almost impossible for any Transcendent to find flaws in their disguise by just looking!

If the demons' appearances could be discerned by just looking at them, the human Demigods would have already been able to find them. By borrowing the World Energy, the Demigods could observe an even greater area. A single spread of a Demigod's the energy could cover an area of over 500 kilometers in radius. With this kind of coverage, they could completely cover the Xia Clan's World with their soul power! Yet because these demons had hidden themselves so well, looking like any ordinary human by transforming their features and hiding their auras, the Demigods could not find any of them.

However—

Demons could not hide their aura if they used their demonic power in any way. If they fought or swallowed a human's soul, the demonic power within their body would show itself. That aura... would not be able to remain hidden. At that time, they would certainly be discovered!

Therefore, all that Xue Ying and the other Transcendents needed to do was just continue observing areas with World Energy and wait for the demons to act! The moment they discovered a demon's aura, they would be able chase it.

Borrowing the World Energy to observe large areas was the most inconspicuous method, because World Energy permeated the world, and as long as Transcendents did not deliberately operate the World Energy, but instead, just used the World Energy to observe all four corners of the area... no demons would discover them.

*I'll continue doing this for half a year. Who knows if I will nab some demons or not,* Xue Ying thought to himself.

.....

The days of chasing after demons passed in a carefree manner.

Everyday, Xue Ying would eat and drink as if he were a rich prince loafing around. He would spend more than half a day sitting around the restaurants, frequently listening to the songs sang by female singers within those establishments.

Xue Ying spent a full month in the Water Rites Town with nothing happening!

He thus decided to leave the Water Rites Town.

He then headed to several of the villages in the surrounding area.

“This is weird, so weird.

“Not even a single trace to be found,” Xue Ying silently muttered to himself. He had also exchanged messages through the communication wristband with his fellow Transcendents.

“Brother Dong Bo, I, too, can’t discover any traces of them! I’ve asked the Dragon Mountain Manor. Last month, the demons were still occasionally eating the souls of villagers. Yet now, our entire county is extremely quiet. I’ve not heard of any villages experiencing demons eating villager souls on a large-scale operation, and I haven’t discovered any large-scale disappearances.”

“Brother Xue Ying, I have a feeling that these demons recently learned of our operation, leading to all of them hiding in some corners of the world.”

After exchanging messages with the others, Xue Ying discovered that he was not the only one who had difficulty finding traces of the demons.

“Hmph.”

“So what if they hide themselves. I believe that, sooner or later, they will not be able to control their cravings anymore,” Xue Ying had read through all the books on Xia Clan’s history of Demigods. Naturally, he understood that ‘dogs can’t help but eat shit’. How was it possible for the demons to see the countless humans walking around and yet, control themselves from not swallowing their souls? It might be possible for them to control themselves for three to five months, but controlling their appetites for a few years was something impossible for them. They would certainly go crazy after a certain length of time.

Since the Infernal Palace had passed down the order, the Transcendents could only patiently search for traces of these demons.

\*\*\*\*\*

Azure River County.

Xue Ying currently walked within the county. His mood was relatively good.

This location was where he had first met Jing Qiu.

*In the blink of an eye, thirty years have passed*, Xue Ying thought as he randomly chose a restaurant and went directly to the second floor. He found a spot near the windows before ordering something to eat and drink in a bid to slowly waste his time. By borrowing the World Energy, he was able to spread his soul throughout an area of fifty kilometers in radius around him. Lately, he had begun splitting his concentration between watching over the area his soul power covered and pondering his spear techniques.

Searching for demons? As long as he split part of his concentration onto that matter, it was fine.

Xue Ying quite enjoyed these types of missions where he traveled to different areas and split his concentration between searching and pondering his spear techniques. In this way, his heart became calmer, allowing his spear techniques to share a connection with nature. He felt that if he continued on this path, his own investigations towards the spear techniques would help him find a Profound Mystery that would overcome its inherent weaknesses.

Mn? It was during the afternoon when Xue Ying suddenly frowned and thought, *She came here?*

“Lady You Yue, our Clan Master arrived a while ago and is waiting for you on the third floor.” Outside the restaurant, an extravagant carriage stopped. A middle-aged beautiful woman dressed luxuriously came out of it. Two Meteor Knights served as bodyguards. Currently, an old man at the entrance of the restaurant greeted her, “Lady You Yue, please.”

“Lead the way,” The regal, beautiful middle-aged woman frankly replied.

The old man did not dare delay.

This Lady You Yue was quite a big character within the upper-class social circle in Azure River County. There were even rumours about her being the first love of the legendary Transcendent Dong Bo Xue Ying! Some people even said she that was Xue Ying’s sister. Regardless, there was no denying the fact that she had spent her adolescence living together with Dong Bo Xue Ying in his castle.

*Deng deng deng.* Following the old man, this beautiful middle-aged woman,

with her two Meteor bodyguards, climbed up the wooden stairs and ascended to the second then third floor.

At a corner, by the windows on the second floor of the restaurant where Xue Ying was seated, he stared at the back of that beautiful, middle-aged woman walking up to the third floor.

*You Yue*, Xue Ying thought. His current feelings turned complex.

Years ago, she was just an innocent teenager who called him Big Brother Xue Ying. She was even someone who made him furious beyond reason in the past. Yet now, she had become a middle-aged woman. Even though her innate charm still remained with her, and her facial features were quite beautiful, he could clearly see the wrinkles by her eyes and her loosened skin. You Yue even seemed much older than Xue Ying's mother, Mo Yang Yu.

Right, You Yue was already over 50 years old. Currently, she was still a Heaven rank mage and could not even step into the realm of Star. Judging by her expected lifespan, she would at most live to be 80 or 90 years old. It was considered quite good already for her to maintain her facial features as she had.

---



## Chapter 13 – A Familiar Back

---

Actually, he did not have much animosity towards You Yue.

Xue Ying's relationship with You Yue was so far in the past that he, at the most, would just shake his head and smile. Furthermore, the two of them belonged to two completely different worlds. As of yet, she had not even stepped into the Star realm. As such, her lifespan was relatively short. With such a short lifespan, she would not even have much time left to make another breakthrough to the next realm. Usually, the number of mages in any county who breakthrough to the Star realm could be counted with one hand. Likewise, You Yue's innate talent was not that high to begin with.

Knowing how short her lifespan was and also knowing how his lifespan would now be over many thousands of years... while also borrowing the World Energy to 'look' at how loose the skin on her face actually was, she truly had the appearance of a middle-aged woman. How could he continue to bear any grudges towards her? He could only sigh.

Xue Ying did not plan to interact with her.

He was only intending to brush-shoulders with her today. The paths they walked pointed in opposite directions.

*Mn? Her business seems to be rather big?* Xue Ying thought when he borrowed the World Energy to probed the fifty kilometer diameter area around him. He could not help but closely observe Kong You Yue. Naturally, he 'saw' and 'heard' what she and the others in the private room on the third level talked about. Actually, even though Xue Ying often observed millions of people, in reality, he could not multitask and listen to everybody's words! Being able to multitask and watch over a million different occurrences... was something

impossible! Even Demigods could not do that.

Rather than focus on any specific individuals, he would usually just simply observe everyone in a more general sense. Only when he detected a demonic aura would he take particular notice. Of course, he would pay attention to any scenes that were startling as well.

As for killings, fightings, scoldings, collusions, and normal conversations between people, these were fundamentally things that he would notice but not pay any special attention to, unless it was someone he specifically wanted to observe.

.....

Third floor.

The two Meteor Knight bodyguards escorted Lady You Yue to the third floor. Led by that old man, he brought her through the corridors to arrive outside a private room. Two ordinary guards stood outside – they were just ordinary knights.

*Zhi ya.*

One of the guards pushed the door open.

“Haha, Lady You Yue, come in,” said a skinny and thin-looking male who sat on one side of the table inside the private room. He stood up and laughed as he saw You Yue enter the room.

“Baron Yin,” said Lady You Yue. She smiled at the man as she crossed the threshold into the room. The two Meteor Knight bodyguards naturally continued to escort her and followed her into the room.

*Zhi ya*, the doors to the private room shut.

There were a total of seven people in the room – Baron Yin, three of his underlings, Lady You Yue, and her two bodyguards.

“Lady You Yue, please,” said Baron Yin as he motioned toward a seat with a brilliant smile etched on his face.

Only then did Lady You Yue sit down.

“Come and have a taste of this rare fruit wine I’ve brought back from the province capital, it’s called the Seven Treasures Fruit Wine. They don’t sell it publicly. It’s only because I know a great mage from their Refiner workshop that I was able to get my hands on this incredible wine. Even after obtaining it, I still wasn’t willing to drink it. Today, I’ve brought it out for you, Lady You Yue,” said Baron Yin, his face full of smiles as he hurriedly poured the fruit wine into their glasses. The wine appeared similar to crystal clear lake water and emitted an intoxicating aroma. Inhaling it was a form of enjoyment in and of itself.

“Come, let’s drink,” Baron Yin said as he raised his glass.

Lady You Yue smiled and raised her glass. She said, “Thank you Baron Yin,” and touched the wine with her lips before placing the glass on the table.

“The reason why Baron Yin asked for me today isn’t merely to drink, right?” Lady You Yue asked.

“Haha, Lady You Yue is really direct. Let’s get down to business then,” Baron Yin said. “Currently, I’ve asked to meet with you because of an inn your Kong Clan owns in the province capital. I’d like to buy it. Name your price, Lady You Yue. I’m sure I’ll sincerely agree with whatever price you ask.”

“You’re really letting me state my price? All right. Five million gold pieces. Will you pay that much?” Lady You Yue smiled.

“Don’t shock others,” Baron Yin said. “I am truly making a sincere effort here.”

“If you are truly sincere, then you should be the one to make an offer,” Lady You Yue added. “If we can’t agree on a price, I’ll just leave. Tonight, I still have to attend a banquet, so I can’t stay here for long.”

“Three hundred thousand gold pieces!” Baron Yin said as he gritted his teeth. “How is that?”

“Are you dreaming?” Lady You Yue sneered.

“Lady You Yue, your Kong Clan bought that inn 10 years ago for only 120,000 gold pieces. Today, I’m offering to buy it at 300,000 gold pieces, more than doubling the price. That should show you how sincere I am with my offer,” Baron Yin added.

Lady You Yue frowned, “Baron Yin, neither of us are fools! You and I are clearly both aware of the current situation that the world is in right now. Since the rumoured Abyss Demons have hidden themselves all around the world, we know with certainty that the safest places are the province capitals! All the nobles and rich merchants are scrambling to find ways to buy property in a provincial capital. They each need a residence in a province capital large enough to allow their entire clan to move into it! Right now, the price of all lands and residences in a province capital is extremely high, and these prices are still rising! From what I’ve heard, this conflict between demons and Transcendents might even persist for more than a thousand years. In the past, my Kong Clan purchased that inn at a low price, but right now, hmph, that inn of mine now has an inner courtyard with tens of pavilions, covering a huge area! Its current value is even greater than ten times of what I bought it at. You want to buy it at 300,000 gold pieces? Are you treating me, Kong You Yue, as some kind of idiot?”

Baron Yin smiled awkwardly at her.

This You Yue... her source of information was really good! Transcendents from the Infernal World had only recently returned, and news regarding the battle between demons and Transcendents had only spread amongst the upper-class clans. She, however, knew of the situation already.

“I also will not play with you. Three million gold pieces! One single price!” Lady You Yue said.

“That price is too high,” Baron Yin hesitated.

“Today, I’m giving you this price. In the future, however, I’ll not guarantee that this price will stay the same” Lady You Yue said as she stood up. “If you have the gold, we can continue with our transaction. If not? Hmph.”

You Yue sneered before she turned around and walked off.

The two Meteor Knight bodyguards opened the door for her, allowing her to walk through. Behind her, Baron Yin’s expression was extremely ugly.

.....

Lady You Yue felt extremely pleased with the way things had gone as she walked out of the room. Due to her past relationship with Xue Ying, all the

notable characters from Transcendent clans in the entire Tranquil Sun Province treated You Yue with respect and dared not to offend her! After all, nobody was really clear of how close she was to Xue Ying. Therefore, not ‘offending her’ meant making no mistakes in their treatment of her.

Taking advantage of this uncertainty, You Yue moved within the ranks of the upper-class clans and started several businesses. Other people might not dare to act as she did, but she certainly had the fearlessness to do so! That was because those Transcendent clans were not willing to force the issue with the Kong Clan, so as long as the Kong Clan acted within reason, these clans would allow such behaviour.

You Yue held much more influential power than her younger brother and sister, ensuring that she became the Kong Clan matriarch.

As You Yue was extremely ambitious, she was not willing to merely exist within the small County city. As a result, the Kong Clan’s family businesses had long ago established themselves within the province capital. Naturally, she would buy some inns, houses, and courtyards within the province capital as well.

After all these years of hard work, the Kong Clan’s assets had reached over a million gold pieces.

Yet currently, the demons had invaded their world!

The invasion had greatly escalated the price of lands within the province capital! Even ten times the original price was not enough! What the Kong Clan bought years ago has allowed them to greatly profit today! An enormous inn could even have a selling price that started at three million in gold pieces.

It could be said that the demons’ invasion had led to all the wealthy barons and many nobles living in the county to relocate in the province capital!

“Hmph, three hundred thousand gold pieces? What a joke!” Lady You Yue disdained doing such business. Even though there were powerful backers behind Baron Yin, she was not afraid of them. Her Kong Clan had several Transcendent Clans as business partners, so why would she be afraid of Baron Yin?

*Deng deng deng.* She climbed down the stairs to the lower level.

Lady You Yue naturally swept her gaze around the second floor.

Earlier, she had been walking up the stairs, looking upward as she did so. She had not been able to look around the second floor as she passed through it then. Currently, though, as she walked down the stairs, she was able to sweep her gaze around the second floor, noticing the back of a figure facing her – the figure of a black-robed young man.

“Mn?” Lady You Yue’s body quivered. She stopped.

She stared at the back of that black-robed young man...

It felt extremely familiar!

That familiar back was something which made her remember her regret for all these years. She remembered her past so many times, and Xue Ying’s back was something she was extremely familiar with.

And this current back figure was exactly the same as that in the past!

“Is it him?” Lady You Yue did not dare believe her eyes. She nervously walked towards him, her entire body beginning to sweat. She had not feel such anxiety in many years.

---

## Chapter 14 – A Few Coins

---

The two Meteor rank bodyguards behind her stared in confusion as Lady You Yue anxiously walked to the window area. They saw her approach the side of a black-clothed youngster who sat there.

“Mn?” Lady You Yue said, slightly startled.

Not same.

This was a stranger’s face.

The black-clothed youngster looked at her. “This Lady, what’s wrong?”

“I mistook you for someone else,” answered Lady You Yue.

After she spoke, she walked towards the stairs. There were many people under heaven who had similar looks. Likewise, how could a dignified Transcendent existence be drinking wine alone in a restaurant? This time she had indeed misidentified someone!

She gestured for her two bodyguards to follow her and walked down the stairs.

“She recognized me,” laughed Xue Ying. Going out this time, he had only changed his face. After all there were too many people who knew his face! In the first place, there was the Dragon Mountain Book. Big and powerful clans were able to get his basic information from that book, including his facial features. As for his back figure, unless that person was really familiar with him, no one would be able to figure it out.

“Looks like the Kong Clan’s days have been spent relatively well,” Xue Ying affirmed. No matter what Kong You Yue was still part of his childhood memories. It was a good thing that she could live well.

“Mn?”

Suddenly, Xue Ying's expression changed and a cold glint flashed in his eyes.

\*\*\*\*\*

Inside the private room on third floor.

Baron Yin sat inside, and his face unsightly.

“Master.” The old man next to him said with low voice, “This Kong You Yue doesn't know how to appreciate your favor! She only relied on her relationship with Dong Bo Xue Ying. Perhaps Dong Bo Xue Ying already forgot about her. With that kind of vague relationship, she dared to be so presumptuous in front of you! In the past, we never took any regard towards this Kong Clan. That year, her Kong Clan had some luck and bought a big inn inside the province capital. Since she didn't give you any face, we could just secretly...” he used his hand to make a cutting gesture across his throat.

He could sense that his master was extremely furious.

“No.”

Baron Yin shook his head.

In the past, the Kong Clan was not worth mentioning. They were not worth noticing in the past because, all of their clan's property barely reached one million gold coins. Even that wealth was all because of Kong You Yue working hard for more than twenty years. Currently, because the price of inns and residences in the province capital had significantly risen the Kong Clan's wealth now reached over five million gold coins! This evaluation was a big increase. Actually, thanks to the demon invasion, big clans rushed to settle inside province capitals. Powerful Transcendent clans that resided inside capital provinces were the ones who earned the biggest profits.

“We cannot afford to provoke a Transcendent!” Said Baron Yin gloomily, “For an inn, it's not worth the danger!”

“Understood,” the old man replied respectfully.

*Knock, knock*, the sound came from the private room's door.

*Zhi ya*

The door opened as a waitress entered and asked, with beautiful smile, “My



lord, may I serve the food?"

"Serve food?" Baron Yin already had belly full of anger. He glanced at the waitress who had just entered. Those who were chosen to serve the third floor private room guests were young and beautiful women with good figures. Their body parts that were suppose to be curved were curved and the parts that were suppose to perked up were perked up. Baron Yin ogled the waitress' body with a knife-like stare. His gaze made the waitress feel nervous and uneasy.

"Close the door!" said Baron Yin calmly.

"Understood." The two guards outside immediately closed the private room's door.

"My lord?" Probed the waitress nervously.

"I want to paint!" Baron Yin said in a muffled voice.

The waitress was secretly relieved, *Paint? Paint what?*

"Hurry up." Urged the old man. The two Meteor rank bodyguards inside the room also took a step closer, surrounding the waitress.

"What do you want!" said the shocked waitress.

"Mfff" Her mouth was covered.

At the same time, one of the Meteor rank bodyguards took out a coil of rope and skillfully tied her while the other Meteor rank bodyguard ripped off her clothes to reveal her youthful white and fair skin. This harassment made the waitress panic, but she was unable to struggle since she was tied tightly with rope. She also wanted to scream but her mouth was sealed, so she could only let out a muffled sound.

Since knights have an acute sense of hearing, this private room was soundproof. If not, any talk or business inside the private room could be heard from the outside.

Moreover the soundproofing was a high quality one, so that even if the people inside shouted or screamed loudly, only a soft and faint voice would be heard from outside.

*Hu.*

Baron Yin stood up with a wave of his hand, a plate appeared in his hand. Knives of various sizes were placed on the plate.

The knives were sharp and glinted with a cold light.

“Kong You Yue, she really put me in a bad mood.” Baron Yin took one of the knives and looked at the terrified waitress. He sneered, “Don’t be afraid. I just want to paint on your body!

“Using your blood as paint and your fair skin as a canvas, you will surely be radiant. Do not struggle and obediently let me paint, so only you will die. If you struggle too much and make me unhappy while I’m painting, not only you, but your whole family will die too.”

The old man and the two Meteor rank bodyguards on the side calmly looked at her.

They were already accustomed to this type of behavior.

Baron Yin was the vice president of a trade union. He would ‘paint’ when he was furious or overjoyed. When he was furious, he would paint to vent his anger. After all, as vice president, he held a lot of power. If he wasn’t cool-headed, it would have spelled trouble.

*Pa* The private room’s door suddenly opened from the outside.

“Mn?” Baron Yin angrily looked outside. The old man and the two bodyguards also looked outside.

They only saw the two guards lying on the floor.

A black-clothed youngster walked in.

“Mn.. mmm... mmm” The tied waitress tried her hardest to struggle.

“Who are you?” Baron Yin gloomily asked, “You dare to kill people? Killing people is breaking the empire law!” With a glance, he knew that the two guards were already dead.

“Oh, you also know the empire’s law?” Xue Ying shook his head as he walked towards the tied waitress.

“Hmph.” One of Meteor rank bodyguards beside the waitress angrily

unsheathed his sword.

*Chi.*

With just a sound, a hole appeared in the Meteor rank bodyguard's forehead. He widened his eyes, frighteningly looked at his body and limply fell to the ground. Fresh blood flowed on the private room's floor.

"Not good."

Baron Yin, the old man and the other Meteor rank bodyguard's hearts sank.

To be able to instantly kill a Meteor rank expert with a secret weapon meant that this youngster was also able to kill the three of them very easily. Moreover, Baron Yin and the old man were a lot weaker as neither of them were even at the Star realm yet.

"I am the Vice President of the Sky Fire Trade Union, Yin Dan," Baron Yin evenly said, "This time's offence and shame, I will definitely use all my might to seek compensation."

The Sky Fire Trade Union was one of the top three Trade Unions in the Azure River County. They had businesses inside and outside of the Tranquil Sun Province.

*Huala.* The rope that bound the waitress broke apart. Xue Ying took off the clothes from the man nearby and gave them to her. After all, it was still spring and the weather in Azure River County was still cold, and her clothes were also completely ripped apart. The waitress would be able to use these clothes to cover herself.

"Thank you my Lord," The waitress still suffered from shock.

"Compensation?" Xue Ying took out three copper coins. Baron Yin and his henchmen were completely terrified. The Baron said, "I'm a baron, a noble, and also the Vice President of Sky Fire Trade Union. You can't kill me."

Pu! Pu! Pu!

With a flash, each coin flew and made a hole in the Baron Yin, the old man, and the Meteor rank bodyguard's forehead. With terrified expressions, their bodies limply fell to the ground.

The waitress covered her mouth, terrified. *The Vice President of Sky Fire Trade Union died just like that? Killed by a copper coin that even ordinary villagers would not care about?*

“Wasted several copper coins,” Xue Ying muttered. If he had been willing to expose his power, he could have instantly killed them by utilizing the World Energy, but he was still on his mission to search and find traces of demons. He needed to be restrained and did not want to reveal his Transcendent skills, so he used copper coins to killed these mortals.

“The Sky Fire Trade Union will definitely investigate this matter. You should first enter another private room,” Xue Ying said warmly to the waitress, “If you go downstairs with this appearance, people will suspect you.”

“Okay,” nodded the waitress.

“Go ahead, no need to worry too much,” said Xue Ying. There was no need to worry, because he planned on lingering around the Azure River County for a month. He would naturally clear up the mess and not implicate the waitress. She was only an ordinary person, how could she face Sky Fire Trade Union?

He looked at the waitress who exited and entered another smaller room nearby. That room was the waitress room, where some clothes were stored.

Xue Ying openly went out of the room and descended the stairs back to the second floor. He sat back at his original table near the window and continued to enjoy his wine slowly.

---

## Chapter 15 – Big Fish (I)

---

People came and went within the restaurant. Waiters would walk here and there, serving the customers. When Xue Ying had killed Baron Yin and his group, he had not cleaned up their bodies.

Thus in a short while, a waitress who was serving the higher floors discovered their bodies.

After screaming in shock, she rushed back down to tell her boss what she had witnessed.

“What! Baron Yin died on the third floor?” The fat owner of the restaurant had an instant change in expression – he was shocked, and felt like the sky was going to collapse! It was only after a moment of time before his spirit returned. Wiping cold sweat off his head, he cleared his throat in an effort to calm himself down. For him to be able to open a restaurant within the county, he must have been an astute person. He knew how big and powerful the Sky Fire Trade Union was.

“I’m doomed, doomed... If I cannot survive through this disaster, then I’m really doomed.” The fat boss immediately brought his bodyguards with him up to the third floor. He saw that there were two corpses outside of the private room, and four corpses within, with blood stains left on the ground.

“Boss, what should we do?” asked one of the bodyguards, who felt uneasy.

The fat boss examined the entire room thoroughly. The pieces from the torn clothes and knives used for ‘painting’ had been destroyed by Xue Ying as he did not want to leave behind any evidence that could implicate the ordinary waitress.

“Very formidable. Two Meteor bodyguards were immediately killed without any time to retaliate!” the fat boss mumbled. “The murderer must be, at the

very least, a Silver Moon Knight! The windows of this room are locked from within, thus the murderer should not have escaped from the windows. Little Five, hurry downstairs and ask who came up earlier, especially if they were strangers with formidable combat power!”

“Yes, boss.” A bodyguard immediately rushed downwards. Very quickly, he returned, answering in a low voice, “Boss, I asked around. Other than our waitresses, there was a black-robed youngster who entered the room.”

“A black-robed youngster?” The fat boss’ expression changed slightly. “Where is this person now?”

“He is currently sitting by himself at the table beside the window on the second floor, enjoying his meal and drinking!” The bodyguard replied softly.

This fat boss was shocked again.

“Little Five, stay here and stand guard. Do not allow anyone to act presumptuously. Also, the entire third floor is now completely sealed, and no one is allowed to come up.” The fat boss ordered. “As for the rest of you, follow me.”

The fat boss led a bodyguard down the third floor.

When he reached the second floor, the fat boss scanned through all the guests on the second floor with a single glance. Most of them were eating with their friends, with only Xue Ying sitting by himself! Furthermore, he was currently seated by the windows, and he was a youngster wearing a black robe... naturally, the fat boss knew he was the person whom he was looking for.

When the fat boss glanced in his direction, Xue Ying, who was currently holding onto his cup of wine, had a neutral expression. This jolted the heart of that fat boss. He squeezed out a smile and hurried all the way down.

Behind the restaurant...

“He isn’t scared at all, sitting there drinking his wine so calmly...? Maybe he has some grudges with the Sky Fire Trade Union?” The fat boss contemplated over it, before ordering, “Little Seven, pass on a message to the Sky Fire Trade Union, tell them that Baron Yin has died in the private room of the third floor of our restaurant. The murderer is currently still seated within the second floor drinking

his wine!”

“Yes.” The bodyguard immediately acknowledged the order.

After watching the fleeting figure of his bodyguard disappear, the fat boss, who had some worry etched on his face, murmured to himself, “This is so sudden... Do you think maintaining this restaurant is such an easy task? Why must such a troublesome matter happen in my establishment?” *Ai*, he thought, shaking his head “I hope I can survive through this. It will be my fortune if the matter was closed without the Sky Fire Trade Union putting too much pressure on me. Otherwise, I can only report this matter to the Dragon Mountain Manor!”

That was what he had thought, however, he understood that even if he struggled to stay alive, it would not merely lead to some small issues with the Sky Fire Trade Union. Thus, his best hope was for the Sky Fire Trade Union not to be too vicious!

.....

Very quickly.

Within half an hour, the Sky Fire Trade Union dispatched someone from the higher-ups to the third floor of the restaurant in order to examine what had happened. When they passed by the second floor, they saw that Xue Ying was still drinking his wine there. Xue Ying had even given them a glance without a change in expression.

.....

Within an extravagant pavilion in the headquarters of the Sky Fire Trade Union.

The President Nan Meng Xin was seated on the main seat. He was over ninety years of age, yet because he was a Silver Moon Knight, his external appearance was akin to that of a middle-aged man, someone of high prestige.

“How did Vice President Yin die? Describe to me in detail what you saw.” Nan Meng Xin squinted his eyes, showing cold intent in them.

In the Sky Fire Trade Union, there were some sections that specialised in dealing with business, while other sections specialised in fighting.

As the President, Nan Meng Xin controlled the entire group in the palm of his hand.

As for Baron Yin... even though his personality might have been twisted, his business acuity was quite spectacular. The profits he brought to the Sky Fire Trade Union had allowed them to expand and grow stronger.

“Vice President Yin and his underlings were all killed by hidden weapons, including his two Meteor rank bodyguards!” a thin and weak-looking old man immediately answered. “The hidden weapons were found – they were copper coins! Standard official copper coins.”

“Standard official copper coins?” Some of the other businessmen belonging to the highest echelon were startled.

“That’s right, standard official copper coins! From the positions they were standing at, Baron Yin and his bodyguards were all upright, and in the midst of taking out their weapons, implying that they were prepared to attack. However, in the blink of an eye, all of them died! Within the room, there were no signs of a battle occurring. This clearly indicates that the two Meteor Knights did not even have the power to retaliate! From my preliminary investigation, the murderer should be an extremely formidable Silver Moon Knight who specialises in hidden weapons. He might even be a Legend rank Knight.”

“An extremely formidable Silver Moon Knight or a Legend Knight?” Nan Meng Xin frowned.

Who?

Who killed him? Was it for vengeance? Or was it done to declare war against the Sky Fire Trade Union?

Even though the Sky Fire Trade Union was powerful, they did not have any Legend rankers. Thus, if they were to fight against a Legend ranker... it would be quite troublesome!

“Right now, we can conclude with a large certainty that the murderer is the black-robed teenager.” The thin and weak-looking old man continued his explanation. “When we went down to the restaurant, that black-robed teenager was still there. He even grinned at us... and is most likely provoking us.”



“He even dared to provoke us?” Nan Meng Xin’s expression changed. “Very good. Since he dared to fight his way to our door, our Sky Fire Trade Union will not lower our head. Blood Hand!”

“Here.” A powerful man with a face full of scars stood up.

Blood Hand was the strongest person in the entire Sky Fire Trade Union.

“Bring some of your experts and three sets of Deity Exterminating Crossbows with you!” Nan Meng Xin had a ferocious expression. “He dared to anger our Sky Fire Trade Union. Our Sky Fire Trade Union isn’t some random group that can be provoked so easily by a lone stranger without us retaliating back. After all, our group has been flourishing for over hundreds of years. Hmph. Even if you are a Legend expert, we’ll just kill you directly!”

“Yes!” Blood Hand’s eyes were full of tyrannical excitement.

The Deity Exterminating Crossbow was an extremely terrifying weapon refined by a Refiner mage, with enough power to threaten the lives of Legend rankers. Just a set of Deity Exterminating Crossbow would cost 600,000 gold pieces to refine! Furthermore, it was not something that could be bought so easily with gold. Instead, it was a weapon guarded by the military. Even though it was not sold to outsiders, some of the extremely powerful groups were still able to get their hands on them. Being able to bring out three sets for this matter showed how big and powerful the Sky Fire Trade Union really was.

.....

The sky gradually darkened.

Xue Ying finally walked out of the restaurant. All actions carried out by the Sky Fire Trade Union had been under his observation. For instance, the woman selling flowers by the road, or the child beggar on the other side of the road, and even the couple within the crowd – they were all spies planted by the Sky Fire Trade Union! These spies were meant to stalk him.

“He came out!”

“He entered the Fifth Alley.”

The Fifth Alley was deserted. This move of his made those from Sky Fire Trade

Union happy inwardly . After all, the laws of the empire was not something they could ignore. They did not dare to just kill him on the streets with so many people walking around.

“He really is seeking his own death. Everyone, prepare yourselves. Legend rankers are able to utilise the World Energy, and that itself is a huge threat to us. Thus, the moment he enters the ambush area, immediately use the Deity Exterminating Crossbows to pressure him!” Blood Hand sent down the order. He was looking at the scene with a savage expression, and was looking forward to the result, “He dared to offend our Sky Fire Trade Union whilst also being so arrogant... Hmph, in a while, we will see who has the last laugh!”

Soon...

A black-robed teenager came walking down the dark alley.

“He is here!” Blood Hand’s eyes brightened.

Suddenly, the black-robed teenager looked in his direction, grinning at him with white teeth.

---

## Chapter 16 – Big Fish (II)

---

*Hua-*

All of the hidden assassins, including Blood Hand, felt a sudden buzz in their brain before they all fell onto the ground, one by one. Some fell leaning against the walls, whilst others tumbled down from the roofs.

All of them did not show any signs of life after that.

On each of their foreheads was a hole made from the penetration of a copper coin. Under the manipulation of World Energy, these copper coins had soundlessly killed every one of them in the darkness.

*I really want to see what you guys will do next* With a flash, Xue Ying's figure disappeared from the alley.

Soon, several spies cautiously approached the pitch-black alley.

"Not good."

"This, this..."

"All of them were killed by hidden weapons. I think the murderer must have assassinated them in the dark, catching them unaware."

"Right. Look at the angles of where the hidden weapons came from. The murderer must have walked along the roof at the side of the dark alley and sneakily killed them all!"

The spies examined the corpses thoroughly. They analysed and concluded what had happened before hurrying back to report to the higher-ups.

.....

Night fell. In one of the extravagant halls of the Sky Fire Trade Union

Headquarters.

“The murderer sneaked his way in and used hidden weapons to kill all of them?” President Nan Meng Xin’s expression was ugly. “The assassins that Blood Hand brought with him were all elites. They were also extremely careful in finding the right place to hide. Yet this murderer was able to discover every single assassin and even ambush them... I fear he must have used World Energy to observe our men’s positions. This murderer... is he actually a Legend ranker?”

Previously, he had only casually exclaimed the possibility of the murderer being a Legend ranker, after all, Nan Meng Xin knew in his heart that the possibility of him being one was extremely low.

Because...

The number of Legend rankers were too few and far between! The number of Legend rankers who could attain One with the World in the entire Azure River County did not even surpass ten, and all of them were extremely famous. For there to be an unfamiliar Legend ranker appearing, it was borderline impossible.

He had honestly felt that at the very most, it would be a Silver Moon Knight who was very formidable and specialised in hidden weapons. Even if he were to borrow some type of unique Refiner treasure to attain the combat power of a Legend ranker, he should still be someone whom the team he dispatched could deal with. But One with the World... if the murderer was careless, they might succeed. But should the murderer use World Energy to observe his surroundings, failure was definitely the final result.

“President, what should we do?”

“How should we handle this? Is he going against our Sky Fire Trade Union? Will he kill his way to our headquarters?”

“Should we notify the Dragon Mountain Manor and ask them to come and protect us?”

The upper echelon of the Trade Union became anxious.

“Stay calm!” Nan Meng Xin furiously shouted.

“All of you, return. Go back and stay inside your homes. Let’s watch the situation for now and see exactly what this Legend expert wants to do before discussing,” Nan Meng Xin bellowed.

Nan Meng Xin immediately left the headquarters, silently returning to his own hidden room. Right now, staying back at the Headquarters would only put himself in danger so he did not dare remain there.

The night passed by peacefully, and the sky gradually brightened.

That night, the Headquarters did not encounter any attacks.

Nan Meng Xin was by himself in his pavilion, frowning and contemplating over the matter. *The Legend ranked expert first killed off Vice President Yin and his bodyguards. He then deliberately stayed in the restaurant before killing the men I sent out! Clearly, he is provoking us. I highly doubt that things will end just like this. However, after a night, he didn’t come and assassinate us... What exactly does this Legend rank expert want? Or is it because he had some enmity with my Sky Fire Trade Union?*

He was feeling quite fidgety.

A Legend rank expert who had attained One with the World and was proficient in hidden weapons was enough to cause unease amongst all those from the Sky Fire Trade Union.

*I must settle this issue as soon as possible, and the only way to do so is for me to invite the Elders!* Nan Meng Xin rushed to the backyard of his home before calling for a rank five flying beast that was currently resting.

“Let’s go.”

Nan Meng Xin jumped on top of the flying beast and flew off.

*Hua-*

With a flap of its wings, the gigantic green-coloured bird cleaved through the air and accelerated upwards into the sky.

.....

Xue Ying was currently lying on the rooftop of an inn overlooking the eastern horizon. The sun had risen already.

*Mn? This Nan Meng Xin did not sleep the entire night, and now, he actually flew out of the Azure River County on a flying beast? Is it to call for help? Xue Ying thought to himself. Based on the remains of the battle that I left behind, he must have thought that I was a Legend rank expert. Since that's the case, he still dares to seek for help? Who could he go to? Unless there's an even more powerful entity behind the Sky Fire Trade Union?*

This thought instantly filled Xue Ying with interest.

*Shua.*

Xue Ying turned into a stream of wind and flew into the midst of clouds, flying slowly behind the enormous green-coloured bird and Nan Meng Xin.

This enormous green-coloured bird was extremely fast, it exceeded the speed of sound! Even Legend rank experts could only watch helplessly as it zoomed by. However, to Xue Ying, this speed was too slow, far too slow.

.....

Nan Meng Xin flew on his enormous green-coloured bird in the cloud layer, rushing for three hours out of Azure River County before descending and following a caravan for half a day. Thereafter, he rode a horse down the countryside roads.

Xue Ying had been patiently following him.

His interest became greater and greater.

*I believe something special will happen!* Xue Ying thought, as his expectations rose.

Having ridden on the horse along the countryside for close to an hour, Nan Meng Xin soon reached the lands of a noble. There was a relatively extravagant castle, spanning close to 2.5 kilometers in diameter. It was somewhat bigger than Snow Rock Castle. Of course, the Dong Bo Clan today was currently expanding. Other than the original Snow Rock Castle that was situated on the mountain peak, there was large-scale construction happening at the foot of the mountain.

Whilst standing in mid-air, Xue Ying looked ahead from a distance as Nan

Meng Xin enter the castle.

*Truly...*

Xue Ying's eyes brightened up.

His World Energy had long pervaded through the castle, letting him examine every single corner with precision.

*This truly is a big fish! Xue Ying's eyes held excitement within. It seems like I'll have to start slaughtering!*

\*\*\*\*\*

There were many traps laid within the castle.

Nan Meng Xin respectfully waited in a hall.

"Nan Meng, the Left Elder has given you permission to enter," a Silver Moon Knight said as he came over.

"Thank you, Brother Yue." Nan Meng Xin was full of smiles. "When will Brother Yue come to my Sky Fire Trade Union? I'll definitely treat you well. It has been a long time since the two of us went out together."

"The demons had arrived recently, making my work even heavier and more serious. Unlike Brother Nan Meng who only has to take care of the trade union, I'm not as free." The Silver Moon Knight gave a mild smile.

"Ai, Brother Yue, it's not like you don't know about it, but controlling this Trade Union isn't easy at all." Nan Meng Xin shook his head.

The two of them soon reached the outside of the hall.

There was an old man garbed in a blood robe seated within. His eyelids were drooping downwards. An unseen pressure emitted from him.

"Greetings, Left Elder," Nan Meng Xin respectfully greeted as he entered the hall.

"Mn." The blood-robed old man let out a soft voice, before opening his eyes. "Nan Meng, what is the problem. You should already know that I don't have time for any of those small matters."

“Left Elder, this time, I think the Sky Fire Trade Union has encountered a huge trouble.” Nan Meng Xin explained. “I truly have no other means of solving this, or else I wouldn’t have come here.”

“Big trouble?” The Left Elder frowned. “The Sky Fire Trade Union could only stand up today after many years of building a good foundation, and it’s my responsibility to oversee it. Now that I’ve passed it on to you, if any issues cropped up... You will have to pay with your life, and I’ll be punished as well.”

“I understand.” Nan Meng Xin nodded. “The situation is like this.”

He explained the matter carefully.

He was very clear that the fighting between inner factions was extremely fierce. He belonged to the faction under the Left Elder, and naturally, he would seek him for help. If in the future, the Sky Fire Trade Union’s power was affected, then it would be too late to ask for any assistance.

“Legend rank expert?” The Left Elder frowned. “Who is it that dares to fight against us?”

“Naturally, he does not know that this Sky Fire Trade Union belongs to you, Left Elder. Otherwise, even if there were ten of him, he still would not dare to act,” Nan Meng Xin flattered.

“Hmph, even if he succeeded in killing your team of assassins in the dark, it does not mean he is a Legend ranker. He could be just a meticulous Silver Moon Knight who specialises in hidden weapons.” The Left Elder sneered. “Whatever. Regardless of who he is, go and talk to him and find a solution. That would be for the best. If you can’t resolve it and he is like a lion that’s opening his mouth, we’ll just get rid of him. I’ll have two Bronze Emissaries follow you back.”

“Yes, yes.” Nan Meng Xin was inwardly filled with joy. He knew clearly how powerful the Bronze Emissaries were. Two Bronze Emissaries were enough to kill Si Liang Hong. *Since that brat dares to rile me up, he will know very soon that I am someone who shouldn’t be provoked so easily! Hmph.*

---



# Chapter 17 – A Great Disaster

---

Xue Ying was overlooking the castle from high up in the sky. Under the careful observation of his World Energy, every action – from the moment Nan Meng Xin entered the castle to his discussion with the Left Elder – had been heard clearly by him.

*This is truly a big fish!* Xue Ying's current mood was quite pleasant.

Actually, the combat power of mortals could not be recognised solely based on external appearances. After all, Qi was stored within the Dantian Qi Sea, and one could never examine it. Like the moment Xue Ying became a Legend ranker, if he did not say so, then nobody would have known.

Even if it was a powerful Transcendent, as long as they prevented their aura from leaking out, no one would be unable to discern the other party's combat power.

This was the same for demons as well. The moment they hid their auras so that no one could find them, even human Demigods would not be able to find a single one of them!

Thus—

After observing with the World Energy, he had only discovered that this castle was a Refiner Mage's castle, with several refiner arrays in it. Other than a large amount of servants and bodyguards, he could not discover anything special about it.

However, the moment Nan Meng Xin spoke at the front gates of the castle, everything was revealed.

"Who is it?" The guard of the castle asked.

“B15, looking for Left Elder.” Nan Meng Xin respectfully replied.

Just this simple exchange of words made Xue Ying feel joy.

Who was Nan Meng Xin?

He was the President of the upright Sky Fire Trade Union! His own combat power was that of a Silver Moon Knight. This trade union controlled a financial power worth millions of gold coins, with many branches stationed in various places around the province. Its status was so high that it was comparable to that of Legend rankers.

Such a powerful character actually called himself ‘B15’? And he even wanted to ‘meet the Left Elder’? From his respectful attitude at the gates with the guards, he did not dare to be arrogant and presumptuous?

*Maybe it is a branch of the Sorcerer Palace? Or a branch of the Demonic Faction? Or the General Altar of a Demonic God?* Xue Ying was trying to analyse this situation.

In the mortal world, for an organisation to make Nan Meng Xin, the President of the Sky Fire Trade Union, be respectful to someone meant that this secretive organisation must have heaven-shattering status.

And most likely, it should be a Transcendent organisation.

The Sorcerer Palace, Demonic Faction or even the General Altar of the Demonic God! The latter two factions had been chased by the Temple of the Earth God for a long time.

All of them were hidden deep in the world. For one to be able to exterminate one of them, the Temple of the Earth God’s reward... was not worse than killing a first or second rank demon!

*Currently all Transcendents are searching for demons, and the demons have hidden themselves well. Until today, I’ve yet to find any traces of them.* Xue Ying revealed a grin. *But at least, there are finally some results now.*

He had finally secured 100 to 200 contribution points.

According to how important this location was, there might even be more rewards!

\*\*\*\*\*

Whilst guarding the gates of the castle, even though the guards were very bored, they were still standing ramrod straight, vigilantly watching their surroundings for any disturbances.

*Hu.*

Suddenly, a gust of wind swept over them before a black-robed teenager appeared in front of the gates.

“Who is it?” The guard of the castle was startled. It was too fast for them to follow.

“B15, looking for Left Elder.” The black-robed teenager grinned.

At this moment, the guards of the castle had a huge change in expression!

B15?

The one who entered previously was B15!

“Enemy!” Immediately, the guard yelled out, his voice reaching the inner castle and creating an uproar that could be heard throughout the castle. Everyone was panicking. This location was too important. Many of them had been guarding this location for a long time, with some even staying for decades without leaving! After all, the Clan who owned this territory was quite powerful, and nobody would dare to invade it.

But right now, someone was invading it?

If this base was exposed, then the consequences would be dire!

“You are right. I am the enemy.” Xue Ying grinned at that guard, before kicking out twice.

*Peng! Peng!*

The two enormous doors of the castle, which were sealed shut and made up of materials weighing over 50,000 kilogram, were kicked wide open! Cracks could be seen propagating along the walls beside the entrance as the two heavy stone doors flew apart! Like an ordinary person kicking a stone, these two extremely hefty doors with a weight over 50,000 kilograms immediately flew across the

distance and directly smashed against a construct. *Hong long long*. Everything was broken apart. Some guards that were rushing out had either been directly crushed to death or disabled. Sounds of wailing reverberated through the air.

The guards stationed at the entrance were all dumbfounded. No Legend rank expert could be this formidable.

Xue Ying casually walked inside.

*Hong*— — Immediately, a Legend rank expert started manipulating the World Energy to determine what just happened.

“Hmph.” Previously Xue Ying had merely borrowed the World Energy as a feeler, but he was now using it as force! His powerful control over the World Energy brought immense, intangible pressure down on the region, preventing the Legend rank experts from utilizing World Energy.

“Kill, kill him at all costs.” A higher-up commander within the castle had realised something was amiss, yet this location was extremely important and could not be lost. Even if he died, this location must not be taken away. Before the enemy was dead, they must move away all the important treasures!

.....

“The invader should be a Transcendent.” The highest ranked leader of the castle was someone garbed in a silver robe. He was pale with anxiety, his heart beating fiercely. “I hope we can kill this Transcendent. No, we must kill him. This location cannot be lost! Definitely not.”

“Master Bing, the outer corridors were captured.”

“The broken-stone trap doors have fallen.”

“Failure. He has no injuries whatsoever after walking out of the pile of collapsed stones.”

“Let out all the poisonous gas; poison him to death!” The silver-robed leader’s voice was shaking.

.....

It was futile.

Xue Ying was a Saint rank Transcendent, so he was able to easily push everything in his path away. With World Energy, he was distinctly aware of all disturbances happening in this castle along with the identity of the primary leader! Yet he was not in a rush and slowly walked towards his destination. He wanted to see... if the primary leader of this castle would be able to lure the bigger 'fish' out.

He was full of confidence.

What a joke, he could handle almost any Saint Transcendents, albeit the top ten Saint rankers on the Saint Ranking might give him a headache. But with his Extreme Piercing, he could always escape during a fierce battle.

So what was he afraid of?

Even if it was an enemy he could not defeat, he would just inform Faction Head Si Kong Yang or Eternal Wind Knight and ask them to rush over! Or maybe ask all the powerful Demigods in the Xia Clan to rush over.

Within this mortal world, the Xia Clan ruled everything!

No one would directly clash against them! They would not be able to win against the Xia Clan. Thus, these demons could only retreat.

*Let me see if you have any other formidable means.* Xue Ying destroyed all of the attacks coming towards him as if they were just some weak, rotten objects. At the same time, he observed the people within the castle to see what they were planning to do.

"Faster, faster, faster!"

"Prepare everything!"

"Mobilize all the Bronze Emissaries, Silver Emissaries and Gold Emissaries."

"Prepare the arrays!"

Pandemonium was everywhere. They knew that the enemy this time was a Transcendent, which caused them to be very frantic. Even if they were to die in battle, they must protect this place! This truly was a location that could not be lost to the enemy.

The Left Elder was also one of the Elders with the highest position in the castle.

He hurried into the inner castle. Nan Meng Xin and the others rushed behind him.

*Sou sou sou*, their speeds were fast and soon, they reached the inner part of the castle.

Rising forward in one bound—

They reached the highest corridor, which was barred by railings in the inner castle, and stood there as they looked ahead. They saw the majestic castle collapsing from the distance, as if there was a monster coming in their direction. Everything in its path was annihilated! Nothing could block its way.

“So powerful!” The Left Elder looked clearly at that black-robed teenager who was leisurely walking forward and destroying everything coming his way. It was as if all methods stored in the castle meant to kill Transcendents had been a joke to him.

“It’s him?” Nan Meng Xin let out a gasp. He had long received from his spies a drawing of Xue Ying’s post-transformation appearance.

“You recognise him?” The Left Elder turned towards him. Several other people also looked towards him too.

Nan Meng Xin was extremely nervous. He nodded, “Yes. That is the black-robed teenager whom this subordinate reported of. Hew as the one who killed Vice President Yin!”

“Ah! So that’s him?” Left Elder widened his eyes, his expression turning pale. “So it’s you who led him over!”

“I, I...” Nan Meng Xin’s expression also turned pale.

“Because of that Vice President Yin, a small dog character, you actually invited such a disaster to our organisation, provoking such a frightening Transcendent.” The Left Elder was so angry that he pointed at Nan Meng Xin with shaking fingers. “You, you...”

This sort of disaster was something that even the higher-up echelons above Nan Meng Xin could not dodge even with their death. Most likely, after they died, even their souls would be tortured immensely!

“I, I really didn’t know. I didn’t know...” Nan Meng Xin understood that he had actually invited such a heaven-shattering disaster!

---

# Chapter 18 – Demon Transformation

---

“Come with me.” The Left Elder gritted his teeth and immediately rushed to the other side of the castle. Nan Meng Xin could only obediently follow him.

Soon after—

On another spacious balcony within the castle, the silver-robed leader coldly watched as a black-clothed teenager continuously advanced through the castle whilst destroying everything in his way! At this moment, the whole castle had already mobilized its strongest forces for a final attempt to finish off this enemy! If this attack failed, they would have no other way to defend themselves.

“We will report to the leader.” Left Elder took Nan Meng Xin to where the other elders resided.

“Left Elder, why did you bring a junior here?” The other elders frowned. Their organization had a strict hierarchy. Because of the current critical situation, however, they didn’t reprimand him for this violation of hierarchy.

“What’s the matter?” The silver-robed leader continued to watch Xue Ying’s approach and didn’t glance back at the newcomers.

“My subordinate knows the Transcendent,” replied the Left Elder.

“Oh?”

The silver-robed leader suddenly turned his head. Eyes blazing with fury, he glared at Nan Meng Xin who stood behind the Left Elder. The other elders also stared at Nan Meng Xin.

“Speak!” shouted the silver-robed leader.

“He killed one of my Sky Fire Trade Union’s vice presidents. I sent the Trade Union’s elite assassin unit to kill him, but instead, he easily took care of them. I



had suspected he might be a powerful Legend rank who could cause major problems to the Sky Fire Trade Union. After a night of consideration, I immediately came here,” explained Nan Meng Xin. “Never would I have imagined that he is a Transcendent. I really never imagined it! Moreover, I was very careful and cautious travelling here.”

The silver-robed leader sent Nan Meng Xin an icy stare that chilled his bones!

Being stared at like that, Nan Meng Xin quivered. His voice also trembled.

“This whole crisis is all because of a measly small vice president?” The silver-robed leader felt incomparably frustrated. Only a damnable vice president! Someone who was just a tiny trash character! Even if the whole Sky Fire Trade Union was destroyed, it would still count as a minor matter, but now a disaster had fallen upon them!

In a moment of anger, he thought about many ways to torture Nan Meng Xin to death. He understood, however, that killing Nan Meng Xin now would serve no purpose. There was now no point in remaining angry.

Everything was already too late!

The silver-robed leader continued to coldly gaze at Nan Meng Xin. Realizing it wasn't worth the effort to say anything else, he turned his body and looked into the distance. He just hoped... the last counterattack would succeed! If it failed, he didn't dare to think about the consequences.

Cold sweat drenched Nan Meng Xin's body, making his clothes damp. He stood there with his thoughts in a mess.

How could events have turned out like this?

He regretted it.

If only he had known early on, he would not have been bothered over that damn Vice President Yin's death. He would have even been willing to offer the black-clothed young man an apology!

“How.. how could he have followed me?” Nan Men Xin couldn't believe it.

A powerful Transcendent.

As a Transcendent, he would have only needed to use a little effort. If he used

the Dragon Mountain Manor, for example, he would have been able to apply pressure on the entire Sky Fire Trade Union. Instead, he first killed a vice president and then eliminated an entire team of assassins. Was it really necessary to oppose a simple trade union in this fashion? This Transcendent even bothered to monitor them during this? Why would a majestic Transcendent be so bored?

Nan Meng Xin didn't know.

Whilst laying low and tracking demons, Xue Ying had felt furious over the Sky Fire Trade Union's actions and enjoyed feeling like a knight-in-shining-armour. Nevertheless, he had been unwilling to expose his Transcendent powers. Saving someone was only a minor consideration for him, and there was no need to make a fuss over his actions, but his chivalrous acts had now bore fruit and enabled him to catch a big fish!

"Commence the final strike!" The silver-robed leader and other elders intently watched the battle. Legend rankers were not qualified to fight in this conflict; they would only be sacrificing their lives needlessly if they participated.

.....

"Mn?"

Xue Ying gazed at the 21 figures who surrounded him. They ranged from females and males of varying statures and ages. These people seemed ordinary, but based on their alarming speed when they came to surround him, these 21 combatants were anything but ordinary!

"He~" one of the old figures let out a ferocious growl.

Black fur appeared on his skin, and canine-like teeth protruded from his mouth. A layer of scales also appeared on his body. In an instant, he changed into a scaled beast. The scales' surface also had the strange black fur. His teeth and fingernails looked like daggers. His appearance was similar to that of the demons.

It was not only him; the other 20 people also transformed into monstrous appearances. Their auras also totally changed.

"Demon transformation?" Xue Ying smiled. "I'm actually witnessing the demon

transformation of 21 demon transformation experts. Looks like I found a really important place. Are you all part of the Demonic Faction, or are you all underlings of another demonic god?”

Demon transformation.

This was a special method common among those from the Deep Abyss.

Whether one was an ordinary demon or a demonic god high above others, all demon-related entities were famous for their tyrannical bodies! During cultivation, the Dark Abyss demonic gods placed special emphasis on developing their physique.

As with those Transcendents associated with and dependent upon the Demonic Faction, they practiced the superior demonic bloodline cultivation manual techniques and were therefore able to cultivate body tempering techniques. When they activated these techniques, their bodies would be covered with scales along with other demonic characteristics. The Transcendents who joined the Demonic Faction... when they fully utilized their power, their bodies would likewise be covered with scales, giving them astounding defense and strength. Their bodies were nearly indestructible, and even those who were not Transcendents yet still extremely strong had nearly indestructible bodies.

The experts currently displaying their demon transformations before him were merely low level creatures.

After all, they were just mortals who were able to utilize demon transformations. Usually, only Meteor rank Knights or above could safely use this demon transformation technique. For mortals, it was tantamount to throwing away their lives, and rarely would they survive using it. If they were able to survive, however... their bodies would undergo an actual demon transformation, and they would gain powerful strength and a lifespan identical to a Transcendent's.

“Kill!” shouted the 21 figures in unison.

*Chi chi chi*— A magic array quietly activated. While the whole castle's refiner array was normally unobtrusive, the castle occupants could exponentially increase the array's magic power instantly in a life-death situation by withdrawing an important pairing array contraption. The rise in power made the

array's force comparable to a Saint Transcendent's power. In truth, an array contraption that was capable of making the magic array this powerful was probably worth over five hundred contribution points!

Countless snake-like threads extended from the magic array. The threads came from all directions, wrapping around Xue Ying and binding him.

"Interesting," Xue Ying exposed a trace of happiness. He understood the value of that array contraption. If he could capture it for himself, he would make a large profit.

Xue Ying was earning a large gain from having followed Nan Meng Xin.

*Pu.*

A flying dart appeared in Xue Ying's hand.

Extreme Piercing!

Extreme Piercing was able to use anything, even rustling leaves, as a medium. *Shua!* The flying dart instantly disappeared and reappeared more than a hundred meters underground. The dart then directly pierced a revolving crystal ball. This crystal ball was the array's kinetic core. Since the array contraption was priceless, Xue Ying was reluctant to destroy it. The crystal ball was a simple tool that was able to transform energy and was thus a common, low-priced item.

*Pa*, the crystal ball was destroyed.

The magic energy powering the array immediately stopped. The countless threads binding Xue Ying also dissipated.

*Sou, sou, sou.* With a swing of Xue Ying's hand, 21 strands of Transcendent Qi flew in all directions. Every strand of the Transcendent Qi spun, and with *pu-pu-pu* sounds, a strand penetrated the head of every transformed demon. Without exception, they all collapsed instantly to the floor, dead.

"Not bad. The strongest among these transformed demon guys was a mid-Sky realm Transcendent," said Xue Ying softly. Within those twenty-one transformed demons, fifteen were peak stage Legend rankers, five were initial stage Sky realm, and one was a middle stage Sky realm. Of course, in front of Xue Ying, there was no difference between them. He could easily reap their lives.

Xue Ying raised his head and looked at the distant balcony of the inner castle. The silver-robed leader precisely stood at that balcony.

“This.. this array... how could it...” the silver-robed leader was devastated. Why did the powerful array suddenly collapse? Twenty-one powerful emissaries, perished in an instant?

Xue Ying continue to stride forward.

He walked towards the inner castle.

He breezily walked on with a smile hanging on his face. Xue Ying was happy because this time he really made a big harvest.

*Come on.*

*Let me have a taste of what tricks you still have!*

*Hong~~~*

Suddenly the space in front of the castle began to distort. A frightening aura also began to exude from the space.

“Mn?” Xue Ying’s expression changed when he looked at the distortion. That distortion faintly echoed with a distant external world and started to resonate! A terrifying force, separated by billions of kilometers distance, pried its way through the material world barrier to enter there.

A towering figure began to condense.

The silver-robed leader on the balcony immediately kneeled, shouting, “The Demonic God is coming!”

“The Demonic God is coming!” The other elders and Nan Meng Xin also kneeled with pale faces.

---

# Chapter 19 – The Arrival of the Demonic God

---

The lofty and majestic figure had greyish antlers and crimson-coloured skin. He wore an extravagant black robe.

“Demonic God?” Xue Ying felt the terrifying pressure this lofty figure emitted. In his entire life, Xue Ying had never before felt such a powerful strength! That strength even surpassed that of all the Demigods in the Xia Clan.

Another enigmatic power, however, enveloped the lofty figure, easily suppressing his strength to a minimum.

“Damnable Will of the World!” The lofty figure criticized beneath his breath. His gaze landed on Xue Ying, his amber eyes displaying a keen interest within. He smiled brilliantly, his body shrinking down thereafter to a size similar to Xue Ying’s before he descended to the ground.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying, right?” The Demonic God greeted Xue Ying jovially.

Xue Ying observed this Demonic God with curiosity.

A Deity.

This was his first time interacting directly with a Deity. From the Deity’s appearances, Xue Ying knew that this should be a Demonic God originating from the Dark Abyss.

Having read through all the books in the Xia Clan regarding Deities and Demigods, Xue Ying was clear that the Deity in front of his eyes... was nothing but a projection down from the Deity World.

A Deity was, after all, forbidden from entering directly into the Material World.

Even Deities originating from the Xia Clan, such as the Dragon Mountain Emperor or Emperor Yun Hai, would be expelled out of the Material world as soon as they become a Deity reaching 10,000 years of age! As for Deities in external worlds, they would be completely forbidden from entering the World.

Therefore, there was only two methods for these Deities to project themselves down into this world.

The first and easiest method was to send down a projection! The Xia Clan had clearly gathered a great deal of information over the years regarding the method. This particular Material World had a Spatial Mark. The Deity would use their power to forcefully project themselves through the vast distance and spatial suppression into this world.

This method of projecting used up a terrifying amount of Deity Energy! Even maintaining their projection in the world required a constant consumption of Deity Energy.

The price of using the projection method was thus immense.

As a result, in the Xia Clan World, only during crucial moments would these Demon Gods project themselves down to the world.

Of course, new and ordinary Deities of the Dragon Mountain Manor would be unable to use spatial projection. Only powerful Deities who had cultivated to an extremely high realm could do a 'World Projection'. Of the Xia Clan's Deities, only ancestors like Emperor Yun Hai were able to do this.

As for the second method, it was even more difficult — sending a clone!

As for the price of sending a clone, it was extremely terrifying!

Even high level existences like Emperor Yun Hai could not bear the price.

In the Xia Clan's World, only the Deities from the Temple of the Earth God and Demonic Faction were able to send clones! In the past, these two powers were extremely fervent in openly clashing against each other to win the beliefs of the people in the Xia Clan. The conflict escalated until a historic battle where each faith spent a terrifying price to send a Deity clone down to the material world to fight. That year, the huge battle between the Deity clones shattered the heavens and shook the earth, bringing about countless deaths. Finally, the Demonic

Faction lost the battle. After that terrible loss, they hid themselves completely in the darkness and never directly clashed against the Temple of the Earth God again.

Thus, a Deity clone was seen as something extremely terrifying.

Even though they were restrained by the Material World and their combat power suppressed to the peak stage Demigod realm, they were still able to make use of the profound laws that surpassed that of ordinary Demigods, giving them a frightening fighting power.

.....

“I have not descended for over 30,000 years already.” The Demonic God laughed. “For me to be able to see a young human Transcendent with a bright future is something worth being happy for. Let us have a seat, drink some good wine, and chat. How about it?”

Xue Ying laughed, “Drink some wine? All right. As a youth, I’ve often dreamt of being able to drink with a Deity. Never would I have thought my dream would come true today.”

“Please.” The Demonic God stretched his hands out in invitation to Xue Ying.

Xue Ying was not modest and went directly to the main hall of the inner castle.

On the balcony of the the inner castle, the silver-robed leader and various other elders kneeling on the floor. They were all stunned by the fact that a Demonic God descended only to share a drink with this Transcendent? Furthermore, the Transcendent was Dong Bo Xue Ying?

“He was actually Dong Bo Xue Ying?” The silver-robed leader and the others finally understood that this Transcendent who killed all the way to their doors was none other than the rumoured youngest Transcendent in a thousand years — Dong Bo Xue Ying!

“Quickly bring some wine over!” A cold voice sounded into the ears of the silver-robed leader.

“Yes.”

This silver-robed leader immediately acknowledged the order.



\*\*\*\*\*

In the lavish hall.

Xue Ying took a seat before the Demonic God first. He was not modest at all. Even now, he still observed the surrounding 50 kilometers with his World Energy. After the descent of the Demonic God, he had become more guarded deep in his heart.

“What is your relationship with the Great Demonic God of the Demonic Faction?” Xue Ying asked.

“I’m merely an ordinary Demonic God amongst the many from the Dark Abyss. How can I compare myself with the Great Demonic God!” the Demon God replied. “You can call me Hu Yun Huo. In your Xia Clan’s World ... I’m just one of the many Demonic Gods.”

Xue Ying lightly nodded.

This Demonic God placed himself quite low amongst the pantheon of Demon Gods.

That felt very unnatural!

Based on what he knew, for Deities to forcefully project themselves down to the world through space and to maintain their projection in the world, a huge price was required. And yet, this Demonic Deity was willing to accompany Xue Ying in drinking leisurely? There must be some motive behind his actions.

“How did you know that I am Dong Bo Xue Ying?” Xue Ying asked. He was more than willing to waste time.

“In the entire Tranquil Sun Province, there are only two Saint realm Transcendents — you and Peng Shan.” The Demon God Wu Yun Huo grinned, showing his sharp teeth. “Peng Shan is old, while you are still young with a fresh aura surrounding you. I guessed that you must be Dong Bo Xue Ying. Seeing your reaction, I must be right.”

“Great Demon God.”

The silver-robed leader stood at the side and respectfully poured wine for both of them.

“Mn.”

As Xue Ying drank the wine, he felt that the taste was quite ordinary. He had drunk much better wine in the Xia Capital. The person he drank with today, however, was actually a Demonic God! That was someone he would give face to.

“I have a small matter that I wish my young friend Dong Bo Xue Ying will help me with.” The Demon God Wu Yun Huo smiled.

“Speak,” Xue Ying replied.

“Ai, I’m sure you know this well, but the Dark Abyss could never compare to the Deity World. It’s way too cruel.” The Demon God Wu Yun Huo shook his head in dismay. “I had put in enormous effort to leave a Spatial Mark here in the Xia Clan’s World before spending a lengthy amount of time grooming a batch of underlings. So much effort was placed into competing with the other factions before finally being able to create some belief in your Xia Clan’s World. That certainly was not easy. There are even other Demonic Gods who are trying to wrestle away the faith I’ve developed in this world, much less to say that big and powerful Demonic Faction and the Temple of the Earth God!”

“Us Demonic Gods do not have it easy here.” Demon God Wu Yun Huo sighed in sorrow.

Xue Ying continued listening.

Some Transcendents might sympathize. Xue Ying, however, had read through too many books and clearly knew that the beliefs of those in the Material Worlds were extremely precious! Those who were able to leave behind some mark in the Material World were all extremely powerful existences.

This Demon God Wu Yun Huo was currently extremely polite, but only because he could not kill his way to this location with his genuine Deity-self. If he could, with just a breath, he would exterminate Xue Ying! As for the World Projection, these projections would be suppressed by the Material World down to the combat power of a mere mortal. Even though he might be more formidable in terms of profound laws, his power was kept to that of a mortal. If Xue Ying were to allow the present Demon God to hit him without dodging, not a single strand of hair would be harmed!

World Projection was suppressed to the peak of mortal limits.

Deity clone was suppressed to the peak of Demigods.

With such a chasm in combat power, one could deduct... the price to send a Deity clone down was extremely terrifying.

Because this Demon God's current power was weak, he lowered his stance and became more polite!

"In the nineteen provinces, I could only establish twelve altars." Wu Yun Huo shook his head. "And this particular place that you are invading is one of my many altars. All of them are formed from my blood and sweat. Therefore, I ask this young friend Dong Bo Xue Ying to help me and be lenient and not exterminate my underlings."

"If you are willing to help me out this time, I'll naturally help you out, young friend," Wu Yun Huo said. "I'm willing to gift 2000 kilograms of Origin Stones. Young friend Dong Bo Xue Ying, how about it? Can you treat it as if nothing has happened this time around?"

---

## Chapter 20 – The Failure in Negotiation

---

*2,000 kilograms of Origin Stones? That's a huge sum, Xue Ying lamented.*

The Demonic God Wu Yun Huo continued, "You should already understand that if I wanted to send some treasures from our Dark Abyss to your Xia Clan's World, it would be extremely difficult. Hence, sending 2,000 kilograms of Origin Stones as a present is a huge sum already."

"I know. Usually, one would have to send it through the Shrine of Time and Space." Xue Ying laughed.

The Deity World and Dark Abyss were too far away from the Material World.

Descending to this world was difficult. Like how the demons invaded this world previously, it was only due to some good fortune that a path between their worlds was formed. As for Deities or Demonic Gods who wanted to send resources down to the Material World... 'failure in sending' would cause them to pay a price much greater than that of successfully sending it.

Deities were neither able to descend into this world nor bring any treasures with their World Projections.

As a result—

They had to visit the Shrine of Time and Space. This was a legendary place that transported treasures back to the Xia Clan's World with the assistance of members of the shrine who visit countless other worlds... Of course, a huge cost would be incurred in this transaction.

"Right, I would have to send it through the Shrine of Space and Time," Wu Yun Huo said. "And so, you should be able to understand my sincerity from the price paid to send a present of 2,000 kilograms of Origin Stones."

“I’m really puzzled.”

Xue Ying held onto his cup of wine as he continued, “This altar has already been destroyed to this extent by me. The Emissaries that you groomed with much effort are also dead. As for the remaining Chief Altar Leader and Elders, you are actually willing to send 2,000 kilograms of Origin Stones just to save their lives? Is it worth it?”

The silver-robed leader, who stood by the side carrying the flask of wine, furtively glanced at Xue Ying.

“No, they are definitely not worth it,” Wu Yun Huo explained. “But the network which I formed over countless years in the underground world of Tranquil Sun Province is certainly worth the price! The moment this altar is completely destroyed, your Xia Clan’s Dragon Mountain Manor will certainly investigate this main altar and hence find all the other altars, uprooting this underground network completely.”

“If these people die, then they die. It doesn’t matter as long as the underground network remains intact,” Wu Yun Huo answered. “They are the actual main contribution to the belief in my religion.”

“Is that so?”

Xue Ying exclaimed, “Your reasoning is truly beautiful, so much that I almost could not find any flaws in it.”

Wu Yun Huo’s expression had a slight change before he said with a grin, “You should already know that what I said is a fact. Having belief in my religion is most important! Why, do you think 2,000 kilograms of Origin Stones is too little? Aye, how about I send 3,000 kilograms of Origin Stones as a present then! If you were in the Dark Abyss, sending you 100,000 kilograms of Origin Stones wouldn’t be a problem. Yet you are in the Material World. If I want to send any treasures over, it is too difficult. After all, I am just an ordinary Demonic God, one of the many out there, so is there a need to make life difficult for me?”

“Trying to gain some pity points?” Xue Ying laughed. “Demonic God, you are really cunning.”

“Do you agree to this negotiation?” Wu Yun Huo began feeling nervous deep in

his heart.

“I apologise. I do not agree.” Xue Ying shook his head.

Wu Yun Huo’s amber eyes were faintly filled with fury. He was truly angry now. Damn this human Transcendent! With his power... he could completely and easily stomp on this little bug! Yet currently, his True Deity body was in the Dark Abyss. This World Projection of his was being suppressed by the Xia Clan’s Will of the World to the limits of mortal strength, preventing him from threatening the Transcendent in front of his eyes.

“Why do you not agree?” Wu Yun Huo asked anxiously.

“Because of your Chief Altar Leader.” Xue Ying smiled. “I must thank him.”

“Him?” Wu Yun Huo turned towards that silver-robed leader by his side.

The silver-robed leader was also astonished.

“Yes.”

Xue Ying nodded. “Respectable Sir Demon God, it was only because of your arrival that I knew this was an altar of a Demonic God! According to my knowledge after reading many books, I know that under ordinary circumstances, when a Xia Clan Transcendent attacks the altar of a Demonic God, those protecting the altar would escape in all four different directions instead of defending it.”

“As for this Chief Altar Leader, instead of escaping, he actually set down the order to kill me at all costs!” Xue Ying exclaimed. “It’s very puzzling then. I am a Transcendent of the Xia Clan and can request for any of the Demigods of the Xia Clan to come and aid me. The possibility of killing me is extremely low! Yet he still wanted to battle to the death.”

“Sir Demon God, say, is this puzzling or not?” Xue Ying looked towards Wu Yun Huo. “Furthermore, you even descended during the critical moment. Out of all of your altars within the 19 provinces, the extermination of a single altar ... is something you can definitely let go of. According to what I know, even if the main altar is being attacked, there are very few cases where Deities would send their World Projections down.”

Xue Ying laughed mischievously. “But of course, these are not the main reasons.”

“The most important one of all... is that you are a Demon God. Yet you want to make a bargain with me, a Transcendent of the Xia Clan?” Xue Ying snorted. “Dream on!”

Within the history of the Xia Clan, not a single Transcendent would give a second glance towards these Demonic Gods.

So what if they were powerful?

Their words would just be bluffs. They could never send their True Deity bodies into the Material World, and a majority of Transcendents of the Xia Clan would not have any hope of becoming a Deity and entering the Deity World! Even if they did, the Deity World is too vast... so vast that Demonic Gods themselves were just overlords in a small corner of the World. The chances of meeting them were as small as seeing a pie dropping down from the sky.

As for the Demonic Gods? Under ordinary circumstances, human Transcendents would enter the Deity World after their breakthrough. Thus, they need not heed these Demonic Gods from the Dark Abyss.

“Human!” Wu Yun Huo was trying to suppress his fury. “I advise you not to make an enemy out of a Deity!”

“Respectable Sir Demon God, this is our Xia Clan’s World. Stop being so ostentatious, alright?” Xue Ying smiled.

Wu Yun Huo’s eyes ignited with fury. “5,000 kilograms of Origin Stones! I am willing to pay the highest price! You are happy, I am happy, is that not the case?”

“Absolutely not!” Xue Ying shook his head.

*Hong!*

Wu Yun Huo abruptly stood, his body ablaze. A terrifying might enveloped the surroundings, as if the world would burn and be crushed under his fury. His amber eyes were full of killing intent as he looked towards Xue Ying. “Because I am unable to truly descend into this world, you are willing to infuriate me, and you will pay for that. Human, I have already given you much respect.”

“Are you trying to scare me by threatening me?” Xue Ying’s fiery Transcendent Qi suddenly erupted from his body in all directions.

The table in front of him exploded. Wu Yun Huo was instantly knocked backwards by the Transcendent Qi. His body became blurry. Very quickly, power from the distant Dark Abyss transmitted energy to his body, allowing it to condense once more.

“You, a mere Demonic God, dare to threaten me, a Transcendent of the Xia Clan?” Xue Ying sneered.

Wu Yun Huo was enraged.

In the Dark Abyss, he was a true overlord, in charge of a vast land with billions of lives serving him. Yet today, this Transcendent of the Xia Clan did not give him any respect. He currently did not have any means of solving this though.

He desperately wanted this negotiation to succeed because this location... was a place he was not willing to lose. The price of losing it was too big, too big.

If not for his worries about alerting Xue Ying’s suspicions, he would rather send up to 100,000 kilograms of Origin Stones to convince him to leave this place.

With just 5,000 kilograms of Origin Stones, Xue Ying was already feeling suspicious. If he were to state the price of 100,000 kilograms of Origin Stones... Xue Ying would surely be able to guess how unique this location was! And he would certainly be even more unwilling to accept his proposal.

“You really will not agree to my proposal?” Wu Yun Huo stood there, his voice entirely calm.

Xue Ying also understood that this Demonic God was not willing to continue discussing any longer. He was currently setting down his final diplomatic note. If Xue Ying were to decline, then he would surely offend this Demonic God.

But offending him?

For Transcendents of the Xia Clan to fear a Demonic God was the actual joke!

“I don’t agree.” Xue Ying stood up.

“Good, very good.” Wu Yun Huo coldly stared at Xue Ying. “Human, remember, you will certainly regret what you did today!”



At the same time—

Within the inner castle, other than the silver-robed leader, a group of elders and Nan Meng Xin, there were also other servants inside.

One of the servants was extremely fat. His appearance was that of an honest person, with two beards flowing down from his chin. He looked extremely ordinary. At that moment, however, a sound transmission entered his ears. “The negotiations have failed. This damnable human Dong Bo Xue Ying is not willing to compromise. I’m not willing to lose this place. It’s up to you to kill Dong Bo Xue Ying!”

“Sir Demonic God, I have merely swallowed the 10,000 of the human souls you have provided, yet you are willing to make me take such a huge risk?” the servant replied mentally.

---

# Chapter 21 – Discovery of the Demon

---

“You want to violate our agreement?” The Demonic God Wu Yun Huo was angered.

Even a small and weak little demon dared to haggle with him? In the Dark Abyss, there were so many demons serving him, and with just a single word, none would dare to go against him because...it would mean instant death! Amongst the countless people under him, he was too lazy to even glance at demons of this level.

But it was because this was the Xia Clan's World! Being a Demonic God, the power he could use in the Xia Clan's World was too little. As a result, he could only set down an agreement with this weak little demon.

“Sir Demonic God, of course I dare not violate our agreement. The agreement clearly stated, however, that I did not have to partake in any activities that will lead me to my death,” the servant replied.

“Da Bi Xi! Dong Bo Xue Ying only became a Transcendent 20 years ago. Today, he is merely at the initial stages of the Saint realm and has not cultivated for a long period of time. With your combat power, I believe that you can kill him in just a single move! In a single breath of time, you can exert more than 100 moves.”

The Xia Clan's Transcendents would immediately report up the chain the moment they discovered any traces of demons, but the time for any Demigods to arrive would usually take a breath of time.

After all, the fastest method to travel would be to teleport, but the distance one could travel was extremely short. As a result, they would need to teleport a few times, making the journey quite lengthy. Furthermore, this was not suited

for a long-distance rush.

All together, tearing apart space and penetrating through it would require a breath's worth of time at the very least.

Within this breath of time... it would be the most dangerous period for any Xia Clan Transcendent!

If his luck was good, the Transcendent would discover the demon without its knowledge. Naturally, that was the easiest and most casual method. He would only need to report it, and a Demigod of the Xia Clan would rush down to the scene and get rid of the demon.

But if the demon himself discovered the Transcendent of the Xia Clan and fought him, then it would be absolutely dangerous!

The best solution would be for the Xia Clan's Transcendent to kill off the demon, but if that was not possible, then he would need to survive for a breath of time!

In history...

Many Transcendents of the Xia Clan perished under the retaliation of demons!

"After killing him, the Demigods of Xia Clan will arrive. How can I escape then?" Da Bi Xi asked.

"I'll bring you away with teleportation. Even though my combat power is being suppressed, I can still utilize profound laws. The Transcendents of the Xia Clan could never compare with me in terms of profound law comprehension. I can easily bring you away!"

"Half the time it takes to breathe! I'll battle for half the time taken to breathe once. If I were to be defeated, then you must definitely bring me away!" The fat servant replied mentally.

"Deal! Half the time taken to breathe once, and I'll bring you away should you be defeated." Demonic God Wu Yun Huo had great expectations.

As long as he could successfully kill Xue Ying, he would immediately escape with this demon.

The moment any human Demigods arrived, they would certainly chase after

them through the undulating waves of space and ignore the weak mortals left behind. Furthermore, the mortals of Dragon Mountain Manor would need some time to arrive, giving the secret underlings of this main altar a chance to move the treasure away.

If he could negotiate, he would negotiate!

But if the negotiation failed, then he would kill!

The treasure must be kept a secret!

.....

“What? Are you, esteemed Demonic God sir, going crazy from anger?” Xue Ying looked towards the red-skinned Demonic God garbed in black robes in front of him, unaware that he was currently having a discussion with another demon. After all, the profound laws utilized by this Demonic God was too deep.

Compared with the Demonic God...

The current Xue Ying was only a young and tender brat just stepping on his route of Transcendence.

“Hmph.” Wu Yun Huo snorted.

The moment the snort traversed out of his mouth—

*Hua!*

A fat and ordinary servant from the group of servants many hundreds of meters away suddenly burst out in speed, and in a short moment, he broke through the corridors to arrive in front of Xue Ying.

“Not good!” Xue Ying’s expression changed. This fat and innocent-looking servant began to form black scales on his body. His height also grew to over three meters, and he wielded an enormous cowhorn axe in his thick and red-scaled hands. The sharpness of this axe was unquestionable. Anyone who saw it would certainly cower in fear. A layer of delicate red scales appeared on his face, and his dark-yellowish eyes were full of killing intent.

“Demon!”

Xue Ying immediately transmitted a message to inform the Infernal Palace through his communication wristband—demon discovered!

.....

“Demon?”

The closest Demigod to Xue Ying at the moment was none other than Tranquil Sun Province’s Eternal Wind Knight Qiu Chi Bai.

Currently, he was in the Eternal Wind Academy giving some pointers to his own two disciples.

“Xue Ying discovered a demon?” Qiu Chi Bai quickly stood up. Receiving the news on his communication wristband, he also noted Xue Ying’s current position on the map. He did not even leave behind any words to his disciples as every single moment was crucial; it could determine the life and death of the Xia Clan Transcendent who discovered the demon!

*Shua.*

Space was torn apart in front of his eyes as Qiu Chi Bai entered into the void.

.....

The moment Xue Ying reported to the Infernal Palace, a spear immediately appeared in his hands—the Demigod weapon Stellar Firecloud Spear.

*He~*

The demon’s enormous and misshapen legs stepped on the stone tiled floor, causing it to cave in. All the tiles he stepped on turned into powder, cracks snaking outwards on the surface. The enormous cowhorn axe in his right hand started dancing as if the world would be torn apart. Within the blink of an eye, that axe arrived in a horizontal cut in front of Xue Ying.

Too fast! Too fierce!

The cowhorn axe’s edge was even taller than Xue Ying and shrouded by a fiery-red colour, causing Xue Ying to feel as if it was a volatile volcano!

Such ferocious might, and a power that seemingly could not be blocked!

*Xiu!*

The moment Xue Ying took out his spear, he did not hesitate to use the strongest move he had.

Extreme Piercing!

*Si la—*

Xue Ying's figure flashed, disappearing alongside his spear. Right after, he appeared to the left about three meters off the ground! It seemed as though he had teleported, enabling Xue Ying to evade this terrifying cowhorn axe's horizontal swipe. Furthermore, Xue Ying's spear was already directly piercing towards the skull of this demon!

Too fast, too unpredictable!

The other thick arm of the demon also grabbed hold of the cowhorn axe, slashing it upwards by three meters and blocking the sharpness of Xue Ying's spear!

*Hong!*

From this single clash of unrestrained power, a terrifying shockwave blasted out.

The shockwave immediately exploded in all eight directions, causing the nearby stone tiles in a 100 meter diameter to crumble. The silver-robed leader who was initially pouring wine was instantly killed! Even the World Projection of the Demonic God teleported immediately out of the affected area.

"Ah!"

"No!"

All those elders, the Silver Moon Knight, the servants, and Nan Meng Xin...

Alongside the stone tiles and environment, they disintegrated into powder. Other than a Legend expert's corpse, every other person shattered.

"How could it be..." Even in his death, Nan Meng Xin wondered how the death of the Vice President Yin could have led to such a terrifying conclusion...

---

# Chapter 22 – Close-Quarter Combat!

## Suppression!

---

The demon Da Bi Xi had to take two steps back before he could stabilise his footing. He could feel the force from the clash with Xue Ying's spear transmitting through his body. The sequence of events made him uncomfortable, as he thought, *This terrifyingly piercing power is a trivial matter and can only cause my body to tremble slightly! But just now, he actually disappeared all of a sudden and teleported a little over three meters? He can even teleport and change positions during battle? This is too troublesome!*

*What!* Similarly, Xue Ying was also shocked. *The full strength of my strike actually forced him to only take two steps back?*

His own body really was too weak.

After all, he only had the body of a peak stage Sky realm Transcendent, with initial stage Saint realm Transcendent Qi in his body.

During the battle, it was only by depending on the embryonic form of Extreme Piercing that he had such terrifying power. Ultimately, his current body and Qi were too weak. It was for this reason that Xue Ying had decided to exchange for a Demigod weapon, Stellar Fire-Cloud Spear. This Demigod weapon was the best match with his Extreme Piercing, causing his combat power to increase explosively. Only then could he exchange moves with a peak stage Saint realm Transcendent head-on!

But with his full power, he could only make his opponent take two steps back?

*His body is too powerful, and his strength too great,* Xue Ying concluded.

Hou—

The demon Da Bi Xi opened his bloody mouth after being forced to take two steps back, revealing his teeth. Following that, he let out a terrifying howl that could cause even space itself to shudder.

*Bo bo bo—*

The furious howl spread out in all directions, causing ripples in space that could be seen with the naked eye. This single howl had the viciousness of a volcano erupting. Under the power of that sound wave, Xue Ying's body would certainly be disintegrated. Seeing this sound wave approaching, Xue Ying had a drastic change in expression.

*Sou sou sou!*

Xue Ying instantly utilised Extreme Piercing to retreat backwards. If he flew with his normal speed, he would definitely be unable to escape from this terrifying howl! Even though Xue Ying's current speed was ten times faster than the speed of sound, this howl itself contained a profound law that would immediately pervade outwards. Within the blink of an eye, this howl had already spread as far as a kilometer away.

Fortunately, his Extreme Piercing was fast enough to allow him to escape the ruins of the castle. He immediately formed three different images, hiding 200 meters away from the castle.

The power of the howl dropped exponentially with distance. Once the howl reached his location, Xue Ying was able to suppress the rippling sound waves with a slash of his spear and the use of the Profound Mysteries of Water, Fire, and Wind.

The demon Da Bi Xi stopped howling. Naturally, this single howl damaged his throat greatly. However, with his terrifying recovery rate, he recovered from the backlash quickly.

*Shua shua.*

Xue Ying soon appeared by the side of Demon Da Bi Xi.

"Die!" The three Xue Ying illusions appeared simultaneously from different directions and pierced demon Da Bi Xi with their spears.



“Mn?” Demon Da Bi Xi was startled, “Illusions? This, which is the real one?”

A fiery-red glow appeared on his body. This fiery-red glow emitted waves formed from the profound laws, spreading out in all directions.

The two gigantic cowhorn axes in his hands resisted against the incoming attacks.

The moment the waves reached two of the images, Xue Ying’s true body teleported horizontally by 30 centimeters. Just by teleporting this distance, the cowhorn axe was unable to block his spear attack.

“Die!” Xue Ying’s eyes were full of killing intent.

*Pu Chi!* The Stellar Firecloud Sear immediately stabbed towards the skull of the demon Da Bi Xi, but Xue Ying suddenly felt that something was amiss. With a rotation of his spearhead, the piercing strike aimed towards the face instead. Even though he felt some resistance, his spear forcefully penetrated through.

Completely piercing through his face.

Thereafter, a loud rumble resounded! Utilising the Profound Mysteries of Water, Fire, and Wind, an explosive power rushed forth and blasted everything within the demon’s skull to paste.

Xue Ying immediately retreated.

*This demon’ skull is very hard, Xue Ying grasped mentally. My Extreme Piercing could not even pierce through his skull. Fortunately, my spear technique has a fast rotation, allowing me to pierce through his face and kill him!*

After all, it was merely an embryonic form of the True Meaning of Extremity Piercing. In addition, this Demon’s body was too powerful and tyrannical.

*Chi chi chi~*

Demon Da Bi Xi continued to stand there, his internal head injuries and the huge hole in his head from the attack already healing rapidly.

*What!* Xue Ying was shocked, *An undying body!*

Transcendents had weaknesses too.

For instance, the heart and the throat were extremely common weaknesses.

As for the skull, it was a vital point that would lead to certain death. As one's body strengthened, however, the weaknesses would lessen in severity before disappearing completely. Ultimately, when one attained the undying body... the body would not even have a single point of weakness. Even if the entire body was powderized, it would still be able to heal!

Compared to Primordial Beings, demons usually had an even more terrifying innate physical talent.

According to the Xia Clan's intelligence report on the various demons, one out of every five rank four demons possessed an undying body. As for the rank five demons, more than half had undying bodies! And Demigod demons all had undying bodies.

This powerful and large demon had clearly attained a high cultivation in his physical body, allowing him to achieve the realm of an undying body.

"General, save me!" Demon Da Bi Xi transmitted via his communication treasure in a bid for help.

The Xia Clan had communication wristbands.

In the Dark Abyss, however, many Demonic Gods were more advanced than the Xia Clan in terms of refining equipment, Deity treasures, and other items. Even though these low rank demons could not attain a powerful weapon, they would still have a communication treasure.

"Da Bi Xi? What's the matter?"

"There is a Transcendent from Xia Clan. I am not his match." Demon Da Bi Xi was extremely anxious.

"Who is he?"

"It's Dong Bo Xue Ying. He is called Dong Bo Xue Ying!" Demon Da Bi Xi kept asking for help. "General, save me!"

Even though the injuries on his head were currently healing, he was still wielding his gigantic cowhorn axes and trying with all his might to block spear attacks.

Truthfully speaking, only his howl attack could threaten Xue Ying. Right now,

however, his face had a huge cavity that prevented him from using it.

*Hong hong hong.* Xue Ying kept utilising his Extremity Piercing from all directions with his spear.

Da Bi Xi's face once again exploded apart.

His throat was penetrated and torn to shreds.

His two arms were pierced through with huge holes! Even though the skull and horns of the demon Da Bi Xi were hard, his other limbs were only covered by flesh and scales, making those parts of his body unable to resist against Xue Ying's spear. Within a short moment, large holes appeared all over his body, causing his two arms to drop to the floor.

"General, save me!" Demon Da Bi Xi repeatedly requested for help through the communication treasure.

An undying body did not represent invulnerability.

Previously, hadn't other Demigod demons also been killed by Xia Clan's human Demigods?! Right now, the demon Da Bi Xi could not resist the incoming attacks and could only be ravaged to death.

.....

"Hmph."

Xue Ying stood there. The fiery-red Transcendent Qi from inside his body flew out in strands, covering the skull, arms, and legs of the demon! The demon's entire body was separated and suppressed by his Transcendent Qi, preventing it from ever combining together again.

*Formidable. His body had already attained the state of undying, and his strength was tyrannical as well, Xue Ying thought. From beginning to end, he had remained unscathed by the demon's axe. I'm afraid that any ordinary Saint realm Transcendent would have lost to him. It's fortunate that I had my Extreme Piercing and that I'm able to pierce through space with my body quite proficiently. Together with my Stellar Firecloud Spear, I was able to gain control over the battle. Otherwise, I'm afraid that I would not have been able to even pierce through the scales on his body!*

This demon's body was covered by a fiery-red glow formed by the profound laws. With the inclusion of the scales on his body...

If he did not own the Stellar Firecloud Spear... he would not be able to pierce directly through it.

Even with his Demigod weapon, he still could not pierce through the skull of that demon. From this, it could be seen that this demon's body was truly tyrannical.

---

## Chapter 23 – The Dust Has Settled

---

In the distance.

Demonic God Wu Yun Huo, who was floating in the air, looked upon the scenes of battle from afar. Moments ago, Xue Ying and demon Da Bi Xi's clashed, creating a terrifying shockwave akin to that of a battle between peak stage Saint realm Transcendents. With such a powerful shockwave having spread out from that battle location, how could he, a mere World Projection, with power only at the limits of mortals, withstand it? Knowing his vulnerability, he had ensured his safety by going far away from the location to avoid being affected by any shockwaves. Even now, he could hear a continuous booms coming from the direction he faced, and he knew the battle between Xue Ying and the demon had already engulfed the surroundings. Their clash had already caused the entire inner castle to crumble into ruins. More than half of the outer castle was completely demolished. Other areas, further out from the center of the combat, had cracks appearing in the ground.

"I can't see the battle clearly." Demonic God Wu Yun Huo was really anxious to know what was happening in the battle, yet he could not investigate the details himself.

At Xue Ying's level, their battle simply happened too quickly.

Not even half a breath's worth of time had passed before the battle and the increasingly terrifying shockwaves engulfing the area ended.

"Mn?" Finally, Wu Yun Huo was able to clearly see the distant scene.

Amidst the ruins, within the cloud of dust...

The demon Da Bi Xi's physical body lay shattered in pieces. Xue Ying stood by the body's side, strands of his fiery-red Transcendent Qi suppressing every single

piece of the Demon's body.

“He lost?” Wu Yun Huo did not dare believe what he saw. The demon Da Bi Xi actually lost to such a young, early stage Saint realm Transcendent of the Xia Clan?

This moment was neither something wished to accept, nor did he want to believe what he saw.

However——

He had to face the truth!

He was someone who had climbed to the peak in the Dark Abyss. Likewise, he was an entity that could spread his religion within the Material World. Therefore, as a big and powerful Demonic God, he still could accept the conclusion without too much hesitation, even if the outcome was something he was not willing to acknowledge.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying! As long as you help me just this once, I'll give you 100,000 kilograms of Origin Stones! 100,000 kilograms!” Wu Yun Huo directly transmitted a message into Xue Yin's mind.

“100,000 kilograms?” Xue Ying turned his head towards the distant Demonic God Wu Yun Huo.

He had previously suspected that something was amiss.

And right now, the Demonic God was actually willing to fork out 100,000 kilograms of Origin Stones! Being an Abyss Demon, who did not have any capable underlings in the Xia Clan's World, wanting to hand over 100,000 kilograms of Origin Stones was something extremely arduous. If he were to send this gift of 100,000 kilograms of Origin Stones through the Shrine of Space and Time, the price he had to pay was extremely frightening.

Thus, Xue Yin could ascertain that——

This main altar was definitely not ordinary; there must be an extremely important treasure being kept by the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo.

“If you don't accept it, then I, Wu Yun Huo, will swear that my hatred will last for eternity! My enmity toward you will last ten thousand years—no, a million

years! I will completely exterminate your clan!” Demonic God Wu Yun Huo was holding out a carrot of 100,000 kilograms of Origin Stones while threatening with a stick of vengeance in the other hand.

He also knew, of course, that the moment he stated he was willing to provide 100,000 kilograms of Origin Stones, Xue Ying would certainly guess that this altar must have some huge secret hidden within.

Regardless of whether or not Dong Bo Xue Ying would report this incident, Demonic God Wu Yun Huo had already lost the battle, and the Xia Clan would certainly investigate the main altar and inevitably find out what was hidden within it! Thus, he decided to make one final struggle.

“Threatening me? With so many Demonic Gods around, if you were to casually threaten me, a Transcendent of the Xia Clan, and I were to so easily lower my head, then how could my Xia Clan survive till today?” Xue Yin sent his mental reply back to the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo. “Hmph. You have to exert tremendous power to even send some resources of the Dark Abyss to the Xia Clan’s World, and you are willing to spend even more just for the sake of revenge? Would you even be willing to pay such an enormous price?”

Much less to say other Demonic Gods...

The price of sending a lower tier World Projection was something that most Demonic Gods would not be willing to pay, even when their main altar was being destroyed. The last time this happened was 30,000 years ago.

“You don’t accept?” Demonic God Wu Yun Huo was furious beyond words.

“Scram!” Xue Ying snarled mentally. He could not completely pinpoint where Demonic God Wu Yun Huo was from his mental voice. Clearly, this Demonic God’s understanding of the Profound Mysteries was too high.

“Damn.”

“Damn you to death! You just wait and see, Dong Bo Xue Ying! I’ll definitely never forgive you. Even if you die, I’ll still find a way of grabbing hold of your soul from the Dark Abyss, and I’ll let you sink into oblivion and suffer for eternity!”

“Do you only know how to threaten? If you have the capabilities, come face the reality. Let me see what methods you have as a Demonic God,” Xue Ying

snorted. He waved his hand and created an enormous palm-shaped construct using World Energy. With this palm, he smashed down onto the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo who was currently hovering in mid-air.

The Demonic God Wu Yun Huo looked at the enormous World Energy-formed palm and snorted.

*Shua.*

His body immediately broke through space and disappeared into nothingness.

If someone was to compare this Demonic God's understanding of the Profound Mystery used to penetrate through space to the knowledge of the Xia Clan's Transcendents, this Demonic God's abilities clearly surpassed those of any other Xia Clan Transcendents. It was a pity, however, that his power had been suppressed to the limits of a mortal... his World Projection could never be the cause of any threat to Transcendents.

Their final moment of exchange had been via extremely quick mental transmissions through the soul. The Demonic God Wu Yun Huo clearly wanted to make use of this time to conclude negotiations before any Demigod arrived.

Fortunately, his final struggle ended completely in failure!

*Si la~*

Space tore apart.

A person walked through the rift in space. This new arrival was none other than the Eternal Wind Knight Qiu Chi Bai.

"Xue Ying?" Qiu Chi Bai's gaze swept across the surrounding area. He looked inside the ruins of the castle and discovered traces of a Demon Emissary's death. With a step, he arrived beside Xue Ying to find the pieces of the demon Da Bi Xi's body on the ground, being suppressed by Transcendent Qi.

"An Undying Body?" Qiu Chi Bai laughed, "Who would have thought that you would meet a demon with an Undying Body the first time you clashed against them. Most likely, this demon was at the fourth rank. A rank four demon would usually have a combat power similar to a Transcendent between the tenth to thirtieth ranking in the Saint Rankings. Even those amongst the peak stage Saint



realm Transcendents might face some difficulties against such a demon. Who would have thought that you could kill a demon of this rank.”

He knew that Xue Ying had grasped hold of an embryonic form of a grade two True Meaning.

Facing an expert in the top thirty, excluding the first ten on the Saint Rankings... surviving the battle was certainly not an issue. Killing such an expert, however, would be much more difficult.

“I also estimated that he was a rank four demon.” Xue Ying nodded and smiled. “He was really hard to deal with. With his howl, I believe that any ordinary peak stage Saint realm Transcendent would be injured heavily. Even the weaker ones amongst that group would probably die from that howl.”

“Alright. You can pass him to me. A living demon has its uses.” Qiu Chi Bai laughed.

If it was a Demigod realm Demon, the humans would not dare to capture it. After all, the moment a Demigod Demon broke through to the Demonic God Realm... that event would spell disaster. Of course, the chance of such a thing happening was extremely rare. The difficulty of a Demigod realm Demon entering the realm of Demonic God... was much higher than a human doing the same. Even though the possibility demon ascending was fairly low, the Xia Clan was not willing to risk it.

As for demons of the fourth to fifth rank, confining them was a small matter. At the very least, the moment they broke into the Demigod realm, they would be killed.

“I’ve already reported this incident to the Infernal Palace,” Chi Qiu Bai said.

Every single battle with Demons must be reported upwards. Based on this battle report, the higher-ups would then decide what rewards would be given to the Transcendent!

“10,000 contribution points?” Xue Ying smiled. His communication wristband had already received a message from the Infernal Palace stating that his contribution points had increased by 10,000. “The rewards for killing demons are really high.”

“It will be even higher when killing a fifth rank demon. Even Demigods are all chasing after them. As for Demigod demons? Every single one of them is extremely cunning. Even finding them is tough.” Qiu Chi Bai shook his head in dismay. At the same time, he took out a metal chain. With a shake, it flew out towards the demon Da Bi Xi, chaining his bodyparts.

“Oh right, Big Brother Eternal Wind. I have another matter that I’ve yet to voice.” Xue Ying continued, “It’s related to a Demonic God called Wu Yun Huo.”

“Oh?” Qiu Chi Bai was listening.

Xue Ying briefly described what had happened.

“Hmph. These Demonic Gods even dare to threaten the Transcendents of Xia Clan?” Qiu Chi Bai snorted, before frowning, “According to what you said, there probably is some extremely important treasure belonging to that Demonic God hidden within this main altar.”

“Congratulations. It seems that you have earned greatly this time.” Qiu Chi Bai smiled.

Regarding Xue Ying’s status, the Infernal Palace had even provided the Xia Clan’s protection treasures for his safety. This was something no Demigod had ever achieved! Thus, nobody would dare to snatch the spoils of war earned by Xue Ying.

Furthermore, Qiu Chi Bai had pride ingrained deep into his bones. He would never lower himself to do such a thing.

“I feel that this Demonic God Wu Yun Huo might not have given up. Thus, I hope that Big Brother Eternal Wind will stay by my side and look after me,” Xue Ying requested.

“Go on. Don’t hesitate. I’ll stay here and guard you,” Qiu Chi Bai affirmed.

“Mn.”

Xue Ying nodded. Immediately, he twisted the majestic World Energy and forcibly grabbed hold of the countless amounts of crumbled stones, causing his binding power on every single corner to reach a frightening stage. Simultaneously... all the debris flew upward. Some of the stone tiles and obelisks

hiding underneath the ground also started to levitate.

The entire castle was dug up by 1.6 meters in depth.

Every single treasure starting floating.

---

## Chapter 24 – What is This?

---

Xue Ying and Chi Qiu Bai stood in the air. The ruins of the castle were heavy, and it was impossible for Xue Ying to move them using only his physical strength. By manipulating World Energy, however, Xue Ying could easily make those ruins float.

“Big brother Eternal Wind, I think there’s nothing special within this castle’s ruins. Did you find anything?” By manipulating World Energy, Xue Ying carefully searched each and every piece of the ruins one by one.

“Nothing.” Chi Qiu Bai also shook his head in confusion.

*Sou.*

Xue Ying willed the ruins to move.

In an instant, numerous materials flew towards the distant wasteland. The broken stones and pillars were stacked together, forming a small mountain, while the corpses and remains were piled separately. There was also another stack for paper, books, plates, and other miscellaneous items.

“Stacked separately? You’ve lightened the workload of the Dragon Mountain Manor’s investigation people immensely.” Chi Qiu Bai smiled.

“It was just a little effort. I also want to turn the underground and secret room upside down. There is still an array below,” Xue Ying said. This time, Xue Ying manipulated World Energy deeper into the ground and excavated any area that seemed to be man-made. He also dug out the array formation that had attacked him earlier.

Numerous materials flew out.

The treasures were retrieved by Xue Ying, while the useless items were all

dropped to the distant wasteland.

“That Wu Yun Huo had previously said he was willing to give me 50,000 kilograms of Origin Stones. This treasure is definitely worth more than 50,000 kilograms of Origin Stones.” Xue Ying continued, “It must be deeply hidden since we have been unable to find it even after all this searching. Perhaps it’s concealed by a magic array! We will need to spend some time if we want to find it.”

“I have also concluded that it’s concealed by an array,” Chi Qiu Bai replied.

A magic array had many different functions.

Killing array, maze array, imprisonment array, concealment array and a variety of other. There was also a type of array that couldn’t be detected by World Energy.

“Using a concealment array to hide it, *ze ze*, it is indeed a precious treasure.” Chi Qiu Bai smiled as he said, “Come, let us use the old method of using brute force to sweep these ruins.”

“Okay.” With a single thought from Xue Ying, majestic World Energy started to wantonly excavate the surrounding area.

No stone was left unturned!

Soil and rocks flew out and piled up on another part of the distant wasteland, forming another mountain. The hole that the previous castle occupied deepened while the soil mountain grew higher.

In a moment—

The previously imposing castle had already turned into a giant hole over three hundred meters in depth.

“*Yi*, we still cannot find it even after completely sweeping the area,” Chi Qiu Bai laughed. “Also, as far as I can see, there’s nothing special here. Looks like the array is also able to distort light.”

The naked eye uses light reflected by an object to see.

If the light was distorted, it could make the object seem invisible! The array concealing the treasure clearly had this function as well.

“I will try a little harder and personally investigate,” Xue Ying said, immediately swooping down.

*Sou—*

Xue Ying’s speed soared as he flew around the three hundred meter hole, directly touching all parts of the soil!

Using one’s body to investigate was the simplest and most taxing method.

It it was a maze array? Once they entered the maze, they would realize they were trapped inside! Similarly, for concealment arrays hidden from the naked eye or undetected by World Energy, they would have to touch it with their own body, even if they did not wish to.

*Peng!*

After he flew around so quickly that his shadow was left behind in his wake, Xue Ying rammed into a spot with a *peng!*

“It’s here!” Xue Ying exclaimed happily. “I was afraid that the array would be more powerful, possibly even capable of twisting space and making me fly past it unknowingly.”

Fortunately, his body had collided with the array.

To create a strategy that ensured outsiders would not bump into one was too difficult. A maze array could be sensed, and hence people would not bump into it. If the array could not be sensed or touched... then the array needed to be perfectly concealed. This kind of perfect array would need to be able to operate and control space! Furthermore, the control and operation would need to be constantly sustained. Human Demigods were unable to create this kind of array.

In the Infernal Palace, they use a kind of Spatial Deity Treasure to achieve perfect space concealment.

But for a Demonic God, sending even a few resources to the Xia Clan World was already tremendously difficult. As for sending Deity Treasures comparable to those of the Infernal Palace? The price was too high! For a little faith, it was not worth it. It was only thanks to the Xia Clan’s Ancestor and his affections for his homeland that he was willing to bear the enormous price to send a Deity

Treasure back.

Therefore, most of the Xia Clan's accumulated treasures such as the powerful clan protection treasures and the Deity World's Warrior and Deity Treasures contained the Xia Clan Ancestor's affections towards his homeland!

"Long distance space distortion? Even a Demonic God would be reluctant to part with this kind of array." Chi Qiu Bai also flew closer. He stretched his hand out to probe and touch the array's barrier.

"A barrier?" Chi Qiu Bai smiled coldly.

A layer of Transcendent Qi covered his left hand. The outer layer contained the True Meaning of Void Cleavage. After years of cultivation, his understanding of the True Meaning of Void Cleavage had become more profound.

A single scratch!

His finger was incomparably sharp, directly tearing the array's barrier. In reality, the array's barrier wasn't that powerful, and even Xue Ying would be able to destroy it.

*Hua—*

The array was broken.

The real scenery appeared before their eyes.

There was a large, ugly bath in front of them. It was 10 meters wide and pitch-black in color. A sizeable demon head sculpture was fixated on the bath's rim. The sculpture had red eyes, and its gaping mouth faintly exuded a wicked aura.

The bath was set on the ground, or it could be said that... it was fixed on a concealed dimension's space.

Numerous tentacles surrounded the bath, connecting it to the space. The tentacles undulated with the Xia Clan World's space fluctuation.

At the same time that the bath was exposed—

There were 25 humans busily dismantling the tentacles from the demonic bath. A black-robed figure with red skin and grey horns was beside the pool. That figure was precisely the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo. He was also hastily

dismantling the tentacles, but because each tentacle was perfectly linked with the dimension's space and was continuously undulating, it was difficult to complete the job quickly.

"Damn!" The Demonic God turned his head and looked at the black-clothed youngster and white-haired man with killing intent.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying, just you wait it!" With a low growl, Wu Yun Huo's figure distorted and vanished.

"He's really fast at escaping, looks like he's good at scuttling through space," Chi Qiu Bai admired.

Xue Ying looked curiously at the huge bath in front of him. As for the 25 Meteor rank Knights, they were already bound and suppressed to the side.

"What's this?" asked Xue Ying doubtfully. The demonic bath in front of him gave him an evil feeling.

"This bath seemed connected to our Xia Clan's World. It's strange to use it within this dimension." Chi Qiu Bai also shook his head. "I also do not recognize this thing."

Although Chi Qiu Bai was a Demigod, he had only cultivated for a little more than 300 years. He had also recently become a Demigod, so it was natural that his knowledge was limited.

"How about we seek Vice Head Chao Qing?" Chi Qiu Bai suggested.

"Okay," agreed Xue Ying. Vice Head Chao Qing was the oldest among the Xia Clan's Demigods. Perhaps only he could identify this object.

.....

In another distant place.

Down deep inside a volcano, a bizarre warship was hidden.

The warship not only functioned as a demonic general's ride to battle, but it also functioned as a passenger ship outside of the battlefield. It was undetectable by World Energy as well as other investigative methods.

Inside the warship, within a dark, cold hall.



A crystal ball floated in the air.

The crystal ball's surface was projecting an image. The image was of a black-clothed youngster furiously stabbing forward with a spear in hand.

“Da Bi Xi has died at the hands of Dong Bo Xue Ying, a Xia Clan's Transcendent.”

A demon with purple armor stood there. His body was covered by scales instead of hair or fur.

His beautiful armor seemingly merged with his body scales. His pupils were a bright gold, coldly looking at the crystal ball's projection.

He had a small build with a height of approximately 1.6 meters at most. He exuded a faint, blood-filled aura, however, that filled the three rank five demons with respect. When they were in the Dark Abyss, they were the General's subordinates, serving a Demonic God together! They traveled in many expeditions together, fighting many battles. From early on, the General's terror and wickedness had already earned their fear.

“Spread my order,” the small, purple-scaled demon indifferently said. “All demon subordinates lower than rank five... if they ever meet Dong Bo Xue Ying, they're not to engage him in battle. Just hide or avoid him if possible, and if spotted, flee with all they have!”

“Understood.”

The three subordinates replied respectfully. They were absolutely loyal to their general.

Suddenly there was a movement from the crystal ball.

A new figure projected from the crystal ball—the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo.

“Oh, isn't it Lord Wu Yun Huo?” the small, purple-scaled demon commented with a smile.

---

## Chapter 25 – General

---

“General Yan Ze,” the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo greeted.

Even when Wu Yun Huo was in the Dark Abyss, he did not dare belittle this Demigod realm demon. The Demonic God that General Yan Ze served under controlled a vast area of the Dark Abyss World, located on a different level. Furthermore, they belonged to different factions within the Abyss. Thus, even when he was in the Dark Abyss... General Yan Ze was not afraid of the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo, much less to say in the Xia Clan World.

In the Xia Clan World, these few Demon Generals stood at the peak of combat power. Even Demigods of the Xia Clan would need to surround and attack them with Deity Weapons before they had any hope of killing them.

As a result, Wu Yun Huo decided to be polite and not incur trouble for himself. After all, General Yan Ze was currently leading a large group of demons that had mostly settled throughout all five Northern Provinces. At this moment, his power was severely damaged. If General Yan Ze decided to send down an order against him, then Wu Yun Huo would have greater difficulty garnering belief in the Material World in the future and may even be extinguished thereafter.

“Congratulations, General Yan Ze, for being able to enter the Material World.” The Demonic God Wu Yun Huo smiled. “I’ll jump straight to the point. The reason why I’m here is because something important to me has landed in the hands of Dong Bo Xue Ying.”

“Dong Bo Xue Ying?” General Yan Ze smiled, “If something important of yours has landed in the hands of a human Transcendent, why are you looking for me?”

“Currently by his side is a Demigod of the Xia Clan called Eternal Wind Knight Chi Qiu Bai,” the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo said. “I don’t know if General Yan Ze

has the courage to make a move and retrieve my treasure? With your current combat power... I believe that killing Dong Bo Xue Ying and suppressing Chi Qiu Bai should be as easy as raising your hands. Even the number one Demigod, the Xia Clan's Mountain Lord He, is weaker by a whole level when compared to you, General."

"Many thanks for your praises, Lord Demonic God. What Lord Demonic God said is something I love to hear. If the Xia Clan's Demigods did not own any Deity Weapons, I alone could sweep down ten of them! It's such a pity that all of their strongest Demigods each own a Deity Weapon. I've seen Mountain Lord He of the Xia Clan battle with his Deity Weapon; it is extremely astonishing. Even if I fought against him one-on-one, I would not have the upper hand." General Yan Ze smiled. "Although I can suppress Chi Qiu Bai, killing him would take time; by then, the Demigods of Xia Clan would have arrived with their Deity Weapons..."

General Yan Ze had yet to battle with any of the Xia Clan so far.

He had gathered intelligence on the combat of the various Demigods of the Xia Clan a long time ago, however, so he was quite clear on his analysis.

"Of course, if Lord Demonic God is willing to part with a Deity Weapon, I could take a risk." General Yan Ze looked towards the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo.

"Haha, Deity Weapon? I would not care about parting with a Deity Weapon in the DArk Abyss, but sending it to the Xia Clan's World? I am not willing to pay the price! Even the entire Temple of the Earth God and Bloodshed Tavern only possess one or two Deity Weapons." Demonic God Wu Yun Huo shook his head.

The price of sending a Deity Treasure into the Material World was too high.

Backing the Temple of the Earth God, Bloodshed Tavern, and the Demonic Faction were some extremely oppressive existences. Even then, they only had a Deity Treasure or two. The Bloodshed Tavern alone had variations of itself in countless Mortal Worlds. In each and every Mortal World, they held a piece or two of Deity Treasures. Counting all these Worlds would sum up to a frightening amount of Deity Treasures.

Thus, these superpowers would first decide whether it was worth investing in that particular world.

It was only the Ancestors of Xia Clan that were different!

Although these Ancestors did not have power comparable to the existences behind the Temple of the Earth God or the Demonic Faction, they were still willing to pay the price for their homeland and did not ask for anything in return! After generations and generations of Ancestors, the Xia Clan's Deity Weapons accumulated.

"Then why are you looking for me?" General Yan Ze's expression turned cold. "What, did you expect that I would help you without any benefits?"

"No no no, you are not helping me out; you are helping yourself." Demonic God Wu Yun Huo continued, "According to my knowledge, you have already discussed with the other Demon Generals on who is going to occupy which territories. As for the five Northern Provinces, they fall under your control, am I right?"

"Yes." Yan Ze nodded.

The five Northern Provinces under the Water Daoist Faction's jurisdiction were given to Yan Ze to control after much discussion with the other Demon Generals.

After all, large groups of demons were currently following the orders of Yan Ze.

Of course —

Twenty to thirty percent of demons acted wantonly after entering the Mortal World. Yet, these reckless demons had been massacred by the Xia Clan, leaving only a small number who were more careful and had gone into hiding.

An even greater amount of demons were following the orders of Generals instead. After all, only when they depended on each other could these demons survive in the Xia Clan's World! And they even hoped to conquer this entire Mortal World in the future.

"Your opponent is mainly the Water Daoist Faction," the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo said. "The Water Daoist Faction currently has three Demigods—Si Kong Yang, Chao Qing, and Chi Qiu Bai. Si Kong Yang and Chao Qing have long been Demigods... and have no hopes of improving their combat power any further. Chi Qiu Bai has just become a Demigod, however, and has grasped hold of a grade three True Meaning. I believe that in a few hundred years of time, he has the

potential to overtake Mountain Lord He in terms of combat power. By then, he might be your greatest enemy!”

“I feel, however, that your greatest threat is this Dong Bo Xue Ying!”

“He isn’t even 60 years old, yet with such a short cultivation time, his combat power could even be in the top ten of Saint rankers of the Xia Clan!” the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo exclaimed. “His potential is even greater than that of Chi Qiu Bai! After 300 to 500 years have passed, he could be the strongest existence of the Xia Clan, and by then, he will be your greatest enemy. If you die in this Xia Clan World, it is likely you would die by his hands!”

“Are you pressuring me?” General Yan Ze coldly replied.

“I’m not pressuring you,” Demonic God Wu Yun Huo denied. “Your stay in the Xia Clan’s World has been too short. You have limited knowledge of the Xia Clan, and your understanding of Dong Bo Xue Ying is lacking. Even if I did not tell you this today, after staying awhile... you will have truly understood the Transcendents of the Xia Clan and how great the threat of Dong Bo Xue Ying’s growth potential is to you. Do you want to die in the Material World after a thousand years of hard work? With how great your ambitions are, I believe you would want to swallow countless human souls and breed them so that they become an unending source... until that moment you break through to become a Demonic God. Am I right?”

General Yan Ze snorted. “Of course!”

Raising up countless humans as cattle before harvesting them himself... swallowing all these countless human souls would certainly increase his chance of becoming a Demonic God by tenfold.

“What I needed to say has been said.” Demonic God Wu Yun Huo’s expression suddenly turned gloomy. “Damn!”

He had been stealing glimpses of the distant Xue Ying and Qiu Chi Bai.

Right now, however, that Xia Clan’s old man Chao Qing had arrived.

“Being a Demon General and having to lead an army to battle, I’m sure you are very clear... on how to treat potential threats that might overwhelm you in the future.” Demonic God Wu Yun Huo smiled before disappearing with a *hua* from

the surface of the crystal ball. Clearly, the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo had broken contact.

In the cold great hall on top of the battleship.

General Yan Ze's back faced his underlings as he silently looked at the crystal ball.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying?" General Yan Ze murmured.

Initially, he thought that with Xue Ying's combat power, no demons below the fifth level could triumph over him.

Yet he did not fully realise the threat called Xue Ying. After all, he was much more focused on the other human Demigods. He had always been investigating Demigods and methods to kill them.

After arriving in this Mortal World, these demons would naturally want to kill and conquer! They did not come for the sake of hiding their entire lives here!

"Send down my orders. Go and seek Dong Bo Xue Ying," General Yan Ze commanded.

.....

At the location where a majestic castle once stood, only an enormous deep gorge remained.

Xue Ying and Chi Qiu Bai were currently pondering over this demonic bath that was emitting a sinister aura, wondering what it was. The many tentacles attached from the void of the Xia Clan World into the bath were currently still.

*Hua.* Space suddenly cracked.

A skinny old man wearing slippers casually walked out from a void in space. With a smile, he looked towards the distant Xue Ying and Chi Qiu Bai.

Looking at the young Transcendents, this old man Chao Qing felt extremely pleased. After all, they were Transcendents of the next generation.

"So, what treasure did you two brats find that requires me to come over and identify?" Chao Qing approached them, a smile on his face. When his gaze landed on the sinister-looking demonic bath, his eyes widened. "You found this

plaything? Who was this lucky?"

---

## Chapter 26 – The Devil’s Well

---

“Xue Ying found it. He was lucky enough to discover the main altar of a Demonic God and even used this opportunity to kill a rank four demon. After that, he found this demonic bath.” Chi Qiu Bai laughed. “I’m very envious of him.”

“This is not just some bath.” The old man Chao Qing grinned. Some of his teeth had already fallen out, leaving behind empty spots. Clearly, he was reaching the end of his life, becoming weaker and older as time passed. That did not mean one could belittle him, however, as his Transcendent Qi did not deteriorate with age. Furthermore, his understanding of the Realms only grew deeper.

“Vice Faction Head, what exactly is this?” Xue Ying had misgivings regarding the bath.

Old man Chao Qing immediately sat down beside the bath before touching it. “Did that Demonic God send down his World Projection? Did he try his utmost to keep this baby?”

“That’s right. Actually, I did not discover that demon. Instead, he revealed himself in an attempt to sneakily assassinate me. Furthermore, the Demonic God tried to both entice me with rewards and threaten me,” Xue Ying answered.

“Of course he would exhaust all methods to keep this!” Old man Chao Qing remarked. “Without this plaything, that Demonic God... can only watch as the difficulty of spreading his religion in our Xia Clan’s World rise by more than a hundredfold, possibly a thousandfold! Perhaps within a few hundreds of years, the belief in his religion would shrink by at least 90 percent!”

“Ah?!”

Xue Ying and Chi Qiu Bai were shocked.



“Could it be that this bath is...?” Xue Ying and Chi Qiu Bai had their suspicions.

“That’s right. This is the so-called Devil’s Well spoken about in legends!” Old man Chao Qing affirmed.

“No wonder that Demonic God Wu Yun Huo went crazy after realising someone discovered his Devil’s Well.” Chi Qiu Bai laughed, “He is really unlucky. Not only did you discover his main altar, you also found this hidden well.”

Deity’s Well, Devil’s Well; both were extremely important to their respective Deity and Demonic God.

Although the majority of Demonic Gods trying to spread their religion did not have their own Devil’s Well, the moment they built it, their power would only increase without end. Amongst all the Demonic Gods known to the Xia Clan... a Demonic God with a well would surely be ranked among the top ten superpowers!

What exactly was a Deity’s Well or Devil’s Well?

To elaborate...

It was a passage!

This well allowed a Deity to transmit his own Deity Energy into the Mortal World at a low cost. A Well built by a human Deity was called a ‘Deity’s Well,’ whereas one built by a Demonic God was called a ‘Devil’s Well.’

Due to the vast chasm of space that separates the two realms, transmitting Deity Energy through the realms was an arduous task. An example would be sending a World Projection into the Material World! Its difficulty did not need to be elaborated on. On the other hand, transmitting Deity Energy or Demonic Energy through a Deity’s Well or Devil’s Well would be easier as the dissipation percentage would decrease drastically to a tolerable level.

Deity’s Energy and Demonic Energy were all different in unique and mystical ways.

For instance, Demonic Energy could easily allow a mortal to ‘demonify,’ or in other words, to transform into a demon. This transformation was the origin of Demonic Emissaries.

Likewise, this transmitted Demonic Energy could strengthen a physical body, increase their cultivation, and even nourish an extremely fast recovery rate. This boosted recovery rate would enable one to even survive a supposedly fatal injury... without a doubt, having a Devil's Well allowed these Demonic Gods to have many means of enhancing mortals. All of these methods would require Demonic Energy to work.

Similarly, one could become a pseudo-Transcendent by borrowing Deity Energy to cleanse the physical body and imbue it with strength.

In conclusion —

Only with the Deity's Well or the Devil's Well could mortals achieve these miraculous events, such as elevating their powers to become Legend ranking experts. This caused countless individuals, including those at the Star realm, to vow their loyalty to these Deities! With the ability to demonify mortals into Demonic Emissaries, these Demonic Gods' powers and influences in the Mortal World would definitely increase.

As for those powers who did not own a Deity's Well or a Devil's Well, they simply could not hope to compare.

"The Devil's Well could only be refined by a Demonic God after spending endless effort." Old man Chao Qing shook his head and sighed. "So pitiful, so pitiful. Even after refining the Devil's Well, he would still have had to pay ten, or possibly a hundred times the price of refining a well to thrust it into the Xia Clan's World! This is the root of his religion! And you have destroyed his lifeblood in just a single move. This loss will drive him insane."

"A weaker Demonic God could never be compared to a Deity from the Temple of the Earth God or the Bloodshed Tavern. These Deities are able to spread their religion throughout countless worlds. For him to be able to build a foundation in a single Mortal World is already considered not bad." Chao Qing shook his head. "It's possible that he has lived for many years, but he still only has a few Devil's Wells in the Mortal Worlds. It is also not impossible that he only has Devil's Wells in this Mortal World. Was it easy for him to gather believers? And yet, you destroyed it all in an instant." Xue Ying and Chi Qiu Bai started to laugh.

Chi Qiu Bai continued. "Vice Faction Head Chao, let's not talk about these

things anymore. Have a look; how much is this worth? How many contribution points will the Infernal Palace give?”

“Why are you so anxious? Isn’t this Dong Bo Xue Ying’s discovery?” Old man Chao Qing answered, widening his eyes.

“Xue Ying is, after all, my good brother. Can’t I be happy for him?” Chi Qiu Bai rebuked.

Chao Qing glanced at Xue Ying.

Xue Ying was actually quite excited and anxious.

Earning more contribution points was certainly a good thing for him.

When cultivating in different aspects, one required resources. Thus, the more contribution points one had, the higher one could raise their own combat power. In the future, the contribution points he would need to improve his own strength would certainly reach a frightening stage.

“This Devil’s Well, compared to the other wells our Xia Clan had obtained in the past, could be considered as middle grade. According to my analysis, it will be worth 300,000 contribution points,” Old man Chao Qing said. “This plaything is actually really precious to a Demonic Gods. To us Transcendents of the Xia Clan, however... we will only tear it down and take those precious materials used for our own use. As for how much the Infernal Palace will actually give you, that will solely depend on the value of the materials this well is built with.”

“I understand.” Xue Ying nodded.

This Devil’s Well had been sent by the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo after refining it himself. Thus, only he could use it.

As for the Transcendents of Xia Clan... they were not even Deities. At the most, they would just tear it down and use the materials for other means. Despite that, the Infernal Palace was providing him with 300,000 contribution points.

*I have earned 300,000 contribution points?* Xue Ying was startled. Indeed, as the saying goes, ‘a horse will not get fat without extra feed.’ His combat power had already increased greatly after obtaining the 100,000 contribution points from the Hundred-Battle Chamber. Now, by just finding the Demonic God’s

blood and sweat, Xue Ying had earned yet another 300,000 contribution points.

But that was natural.

The reward from the Hundred-Battle Chambers was purely to groom geniuses.

As for giving the Devil's Well to the Xia Clan, it was a form of fair trade.

"Wait. The price I just quoted isn't entirely accurate. I'll ask Palace Head Chen to come over," Old man Chao Qing said.

.....

Palace Head Chen's true body was permanently stationed within the Infernal World. The being that broke through space to rush over was, in fact, his Qi Avatar. Thoroughly inspecting the situation, he understood what had happened and immediately congratulated Xue Ying, giving him 300,000 contribution points as a reward.

Actually, exchanging any precious treasures with the Xia Clan for contribution points was purely based on past examples. Palace Head Chen had to adhere to the rules. As the inspector of the item, no matter how much Palace Head Chen wished to inflate the value of the gift and grant more contribution points, he could not do so randomly. The law and order of the Xia Clan community had to be followed strictly

"Xue Ying." Old man Chao Qing entrusted a task to him before leaving. "After destroying this Demonic God's lifeblood, I believe he is certainly very frustrated right now. We know his combat power in this world is very limited, but you must not be too arrogant. Stay alert."

"I understand." Xue Ying nodded.

His parents and family members were all situated in his castle, and his little brother had not yet left for the Eternal Wind Academy. There was nothing to fear in regards to the safety of his loved ones.

At the most, when his little brother planned on returning to the Eternal Wind Academy... Xue Ying himself would escort him.

Furthermore, the Demonic God's World Projection into the Mortal World would continuously consume vast amounts of energy the longer he stayed.

Therefore, the Demonic God would certainly not stay in this world for too long. Within a day, the World Projection of the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo would certainly dissipate away from this world. What of any future attacks? The World Projection had a strength limit at the peak of a mortal's. As a result, there would be no real value for him in descending again into this world. The Demonic God himself would have to determine and see if it was worth the price as well. If there was no gain from coming into this world, then would he still pay the price for that? No Demonic God was that foolish.

Soon —

Several Star realm experts from the Dragon Mountain Manor came over on a flying ship. This was the main altar of a Demonic God. Even though it had been decimated, they would still come over to inspect it once again.

Chao Qing, Chi Qiu Bai and the others proceeded to leave and return to their respective locations.

“Let's go.” Xue Ying watched as the people from the Dragon Mountain Manor inspected piles and piles of countless mortal articles. There was a huge amount of gold and precious treasures. Xue Ying and Chi Qiu Bai did not care about the mortal goods. After all, the Dong Bo Clan and Eternal Wind Academy were Transcendent Clans; both owned more than enough mortal treasures.

In the blink of an eye, Xue Ying shot up into the sky. At the same time, he manipulated the World Energy within 50 kilometers of him, creating the sound of an explosion.

All the clouds within the area cracked apart, causing a shockwave to disperse in all directions.

“Mn?”

The Demonic God Wu Yun Huo had been hiding to observe them with a ferocious gleam in his eyes. He had been able to clearly see the distant Xue Ying, but his expression suddenly changed upon seeing the shock wave within that 50 kilometer area. His vision was obstructed, and by the time the shock wave dissipated, he could no longer see Xue Ying.

---

## Chapter 27 – Fury

---

“Dong Bo Xue Ying!” Demonic God Wu Yun Huo muttered—his voice full of killing intent.

What does the saying ‘Using power to overcome the law’ represent?

Currently, the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo was feeling sullen. His comprehension in the Profound Laws was clearly much deeper than anybody belonging to any living person of the Xia Clan in this Mortal World. What a pity that the Will of the World had suppressed his combat power to the limits of a mortal! Furthermore, Xue Ying’s combat power was at the peak of a Saint realm Transcendent! That great disparity was like Xue Ying being a giant standing in front of an ant. Xue Ying had recently manipulated the World Energy within a range of 50 kilometers from him, causing an explosion and demarcating that area as his absolute ground! With his strength, the Demonic God did not dare to try to penetrate through, as he would be shattered the moment he entered.

“I spent ages in this Xia Clan’s World, putting in so much effort to send my Devil’s Well into this world. You destroyed everything! If we were in the Dark Abyss, I would certainly torture your soul in 3000 different ways!”

“Wait and see. Even though I can’t kill you, that General Yan Ze will certainly be able to do so!”

He had been living in the Dark Abyss for a long time and clearly understood the rules of survival among demons. Even though he had only interacted with General Yan Ze for mere moments... he understood General Yan Ze’s personality. He was absolutely sure that the General would not let such a frightening threat grow on his own. Given a chance, Xue Ying would be killed!

*Hu.* With a single action, the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo disappeared.

\*\*\*\*\*

Azure River County, Xue Ying's Castle.

In the wilderness at the foot of the mountain, the aromatic scent of the flowers diffused into the surrounding.

Black robe fluttering, the crimson-skinned Demonic God Wu Yun Huo appeared right in this wilderness. At the same time, he looked towards the distant range of mountains, especially the highest mountain amongst all—Snowrock Mountain.

At the peak of that mountain, there was an ordinary-looking castle, with snow accumulating on its roof.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying, is this your home, the Snowrock Castle?” Demonic God Wu Yun Huo sneered. “I’ve said before that I’ll definitely make you regret your actions! First, I’ll destroy your castle!”

*Sou!*

Taking a single step—

He travelled a distance of many kilometers and appeared in the air above the Snowrock Castle.

“What is this?!” Demonic God Wu Yun Huo became startled.

He felt a terrifying power fill the surrounding space. The surrounding few kilometers of Snowrock Castle was filled with a domineering aura. Only, this incredible power remained dormant. The moment it erupted, even a peak Demigod existence would be trapped for quite some time. As for the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo, his power was too weak. He had no way of fighting against this sort of power!

“Wu Yun Huo!”

A red-robed figure walked out from within Snowrock Castle's main building. With a step, he appeared in midair.

It was a red-robed, black-haired, youthful-looking man. His skin glowed with a fiery-red aura. His expression showed fury and killing intent.

This was precisely the Qi Avatar of Xue Ying!

“Dong Bo Xue Ying!” The Demonic God Wu Yun Huo was trapped in place by that horrific power. No matter how much he struggled, he could not escape. He looked down towards the red-robed, youthful man

“You actually dared to come here!” Xue Ying was truly angry now. Previously, he was actually quite casual in his treatment of the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo, but right now, he boiled with rage!

Snowrock Castle.

This was his home! The people who lived here were extremely important to him!

For them, he was willing to do anything.

This damnable Wu Yun Huo actually dared to linger around this world.

“Hahaha... hahaha... I never imagined you’d construct such a frightening array around your Snowrock Castle. But it’s useless! You’ve gone against me by destroying my lifeblood. You and your entire clan will be exterminated! Just wait and see. My vengeance will last for an eternity!” The Demonic God Wu Yun Huo laughed crazily.

“Die!” The red-robed Xue Ying’s expression radiated a cold intensity.

*Hong.* The World Energy instantly formed into two gigantic palms, each palm encompassing many kilometers in diameter. The two gigantic palms clapped together, the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo between them!

The Demonic God Wu Yun Huo looked at Xue Ying, before laughing maniacally, “Just wait and see.”

*Peng!*

The moment the two palms clapped together, the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo dissipated his World Projection. His true body, situated in the distant Dark Abyss, gave up on controlling it! Maintaining the World Projection had come at a great cost. Originally, he had wanted to give up his World Projection after destroying the Snowrock Castle. Since he failed in that task, he was not foolish enough to have a taste of being ‘smacked.’



*Hong long long* ~ When the two palms clapped in midair, it generated a shockwave that spread out in all directions.

Xue Ying immediately used the World Energy to isolate the shockwave impact from the clap.

“What just happened?”

“This, oh god?”

“That is...”

Several guards standing on top of Snowrock Castle and several servants walking along the inner castle saw the scene happening high up in the skies.

They had seen that ugly-looking, black-robed demon and two palms occupying many kilometers clapping the black-robed demon. This was such a shocking scene. Any one of the palms high up in the air... was bigger than the entire Snowrock Castle! This startled the servants and guards.

They had also seen the red-robed, black-haired, youthful-looking man floating high above the main building of the castle.

At once, they knew that he was the pride of their Snowrock Castle, the legendary Dong Bo Xue Ying! Without any doubt, they knew the two gigantic palms that had appeared mysteriously must have been formed by Xue Ying. There was only a single Transcendent belonging to this castle. If it was not Xue Ying, then who would it be?

“Our amazing Young Master is really formidable.”

“That ugly-looking chap was killed by our Young Master the moment he appeared.”

“Really formidable.”

“I’m afraid that those two huge palms can level the entire castle.”

“This is what you call a Transcendent! All demonic entities must retreat in the face of him.”

The servants and guards murmured amongst themselves.

Standing in midair above the main building of the castle, Xue Ying’s fury did

not abate.

*That Wu Yun Huo really is lingering on in this world. It seems that it is time for me to expand my Dong Bo Clan's mortal influence, Xue Ying thought. That way, I can destroy his religion even faster!*

*A Demonic God, separated by so much space and yet he still dared to threaten me.*

Having seen the Demonic God Wu Yun Huo appear near Snowrock Castle, Xue Ying's fury became unbearable.

If his combat power was powerful enough, he would even kill his way to the Dark Abyss, getting rid of that Demonic God! But in his heart, he understood that his current combat power was still extremely weak. Only in the Mortal's World did he have the qualifications to show disdain towards Deities and Demonic Gods. If he entered the Dark Abyss, then he would merely be considered some small side-dish.

"Mn?"

Xue Ying's expression changed suddenly.

He suddenly turned towards the north.

He was merely a Qi Avatar imbued with a very small amount of soul. Even still, his comprehension of the Realms was similar to that of his true body. He could control the World Energy at the same level as his true body, but using the World Energy as a form of observation strained him. His true body might feel fatigue after long period of time, but it could do it. Such a continued use of the World Energy was something his Qi Avatar could not achieve.

Because of Wu Yun Huo's attempt to destroy Xue Ying's castle, this Qi Avatar manipulated the World Energy to feel for any disturbances within 50 kilometers of his position.

Currently, amongst his senses...

He could feel a terrifying and wicked aura appearing in the one of the northern fields.

Xue Ying looked to the north.

At the foot of the mountain, in the distant ordinary-looking field, there was a small, skinny demon. He was covered in beautiful scales, as if he was a piece of art. Even though he might seem thin and small, a wicked and terrifying aura emitted from him... It enveloped the entire field around him! Sensing Xue Ying's attention, the demon's pair of golden-glowing eyes looked right at Xue Ying.

They were separated by tens of kilometers.

Xue Ying felt that he had been seen through entirely. This sort of feeling was extremely uncomfortable. At that moment, he understood the gap in their combat power. That purple-scaled, small, skinny demon gave off a threatening feeling that surpassed that of any Demigods belonging to the Xia Clan.

---

## Chapter 28 – Northern Land

---

Demon General Yan Ze stood on that field looking at the distant Snowrock Castle.

He used his mental perception....

He perceived the flow of particles everywhere!

All things were composed of particles. The fast-moving light contained particles. The floating wind was also composed of particles. The entire area of Snowrock Mountain was also composed of countless particles.

“Snowrock Castle.” General Yan Ze said to himself as each particle of Snowrock Castle conveyed a variety of information through his mental perception.

“There are 1,899 humans there.”

“An alarm array envelops the area and will activate upon the discovery of an intruder.”

“Likewise, there is an extraordinarily powerful killing array that is combined with a trapping array and maze array. I suspect even a Demon General would be trapped within this array for sometime.” General Yan Ze inwardly nodded. “I doubt it is possible to invade Snowrock Castle and kill Xue Ying’s true body.”

He only came this time to scout and asses the situation here.

Xue Ying’s true body was travelling to many places, searching for demons. Xue Ying could change his appearance, so it was extremely difficult to discover his true body. Since the demons were hiding, they suppressed their auras and camouflaged their bodies to avoid being found. Under these conditions, it was also extremely hard for them to find Xue Ying!

But there would be a time....

When Xue Ying's true body returned to Snowrock Castle, then that would be the perfect time to kill Xue Ying.

"What a pity; there's no way to invade his Snowrock Castle. The risk is too high!" General Yan Ze gave up on that idea. "I need to be patient to ensure his death I need to wait for an opportunity and behead him in one move."

He took one step forward.

*Shua.*

General Yan Ze directly penetrated into the void and vanished.

General Yan Ze was extremely cautious. He had scouted through his Demonic Avatar! Just like how human Saint Transcendents were able to use Qi Avatars, powerful demons were also able to use their demonic energy to make an avatar. Because they were trying their hardest to conceal themselves while they're in Xia Clan's World, however, it was rare for the demons to make one.

A Demonic Avatar was made from condensed Demonic energy, and there was no way to conceal it! No matter where it was, it would expose the demon and become detectable by a human Transcendent using World Energy.

If a Demonic Avatar was killed, the demon's soul would also suffer.

Demons would only use Demonic Avatars when absolutely necessary.

Even General Yan Ze only used it because he wanted to scout Snowrock Castle by himself and quickly leave. He would not dare to strut around or stay for a long time.

.....

"Gone?" When Xue Ying had just finished making a report to the Infernal Palace when the purple-scaled, small, skinny demon had already penetrated space and left.

"He already left," Xue Ying immediately reported to Infernal Palace.

Almost immediately, Palace Head Chen replied to Xue Ying. "Xue Ying, the Demigod demon you described must be Yan Ze. Based on our investigations, he's a terrifying existence. His strength is unfathomable. He's really cautious and has had no prior clashes with us. We don't know much more about him, but we

know that all demons from the five northern provinces are under his command.”

“Mn?” Xue Ying was surprised. “The whole five northern provinces?”

“Yes, he can be considered as the king of demons from the five northern provinces. The highest leader!” explained Palace Head Chen. “He’s also your Water Daoist Faction’s biggest enemy! This is all we know about him. Now is a crucial time to collect detailed information. In short, be sure not fight with him, and if possible, avoid him.”

“Understood,” Xue Ying replied.

From his simple contact with General Yan Ze just now.

With the World Energy he had sensed the outrageous and abnormally powerful Demonic aura. Xue Ying knew that the aura of a being with average power wouldn’t vanish instantly. Likewise, the aura wouldn’t surge violently up to this level. The demon had either purposefully released his aura for provocation, or he was really cautious and only sent his Demonic Avatar.

“That feeling.” Xue Ying frowned.

It was really uncomfortable.

He felt that the demon Demigod Yan Ze had been able to see through him completely. This sort of feeling made Xue Ying extremely alert. Xue Ying knew that his senses were not giving him a false alarm; there was a good reason for him to feel the way he felt. He knew some kind of energy had permeated the area and spied on him. Unfortunately, he couldn’t resist this energy since his level was still too low.

*It is said that Demon Demigods are on par with our Xia Clan’s top Demigods armed with deity weapons, pondered Xue Ying. There’s still gap with our Xia Clan’s Transcendents’ individual might.*

Most demons were spawned by the Dark Abyss, and only a handful were the offspring of other demons.

Compared with mortals, demons had stronger innate primordial bloodlines. Just like how rank five demons had immortal bodies, the demon Demigods were

even more threatening. They had tyrannical bodies that were unparalleled, and their Demonic powers were more overbearing than Transcendent Qi. It could be said that their foundation, innate skill, and other aspects could completely suppress Xia Clan's men. Moreover, the population of Dark Abyss demons were unmeasurable. As for individual prowess? They had more battle experience, and their understanding of the Profound Mysteries were closely related to combat fighting.

Conversely, Xia Clan's Transcendents cultivated in a peaceful environment. They also had weaker close combat prowess.

"Our Water Daoist Faction's biggest enemy?" Xue Ying's eyes sparkled.  
"General Yan Ze?"

.....

After General Yan Ze's appearance at Snowrock Castle, the Five Northern Provinces highest leader vanished without any trace.

Although Si Kong Yang, Chao Qing and Chi Qiu Bai personally searched for him, they still couldn't find him.

Xue Ying's true body continued to look for traces of demons throughout the Tranquil Sun Province. As he did so, he headed to the north.

Previously, he had kept his guard up and waited at the Water Rites town. Having no results searching in that fashion, he gave up that tactic and started to travel.

He went to mountain villages.

Walked on major roads.

Visited cities.

Every places he went, Xue Ying would always maintain his control of the World Energy to envelop and examine the hundred kilometers area around him. It seemed, however, as if all the demons in the Tranquil Sun Province had vanished. He couldn't find any trace of demons.

Xue Ying would sometimes even act chivalrously in the hopes of catching another big fish. Previously, he had killed a rank four demon and discovered a

Devil's Well, exchanging it for 300,000 contribution points.

What a pity –

Not to mention a demon, he couldn't even find any main altars of a Demonic God. Instead, he had killed a fair amount of corrupted nobles, robbers, and other similar trash.

.....

Hu ~

Cold wind whistled by.

The weather became colder and the population sparser as he neared the northern parts of Tranquil Sun province.

In a boundless snow-covered plain, the population was so sparse that people could only see a small village occasionally after they had traveled for five to fifty kilometers. The commoners there used sleighs as a means of transportation. They struggled to survive in this bitterly cold place.

People were barely able to survive on this land. To the north was the Absolute Northernmost Great Snow Plains. The entire 50,000 kilometer area was forbidden land for mortals!

"The world has become a vast expanse of whiteness, really clean." Xue Ying walked on the snow, leaving behind a long string of footprints.

Several months later.

Because he had voluntarily 'become a knight in shining armor,' he had seen too much viciousness, so much that it affected his mood. Now that he had arrived at the northernmost part of Tranquil Sun Province, there was no sign of human habitation. As he walked on the desolate snow, his heart gradually calmed, as if his soul had been cleansed.

"This world is naturally vast and without boundary." Xue Ying stood on the top of a snow mountain. He looked at the distant expanse of whiteness with several frozen lakes, trees and other things. The feeling of vastness was really matchless.

Xue Ying sat cross-legged at the mountain top. He took out a bottle of wine, drinking it leisurely while watching the scenery.



He felt pleasure whenever he was on a snow mountain, gazing at the world. It seemed to be without boundary as even with his superior eyesight, he still could not see an end.

“The vast Earth, able to sustain everything,” Xue Ying softly whispered.

It seemed that something moved in his mind.

“The Earth...”

Xue Ying’s eyes sparkled. His soul completely fused together with the World.

The World Myriad Existences Energy fused with him and rushed forth.

There was the flexible Wind, the violent and blazing Fire, the gentle and unpredictable Water...

And the Earth, it contained endless and heavy earth power. Boundless, limitless, able to bear and support the Myriad Existences.

---

## Chapter 29 – Acceptance

---

“Too beautiful.” Ever since his youth, Xue Ying had walked countless roads, all over the world, yet never had he experienced such feelings of intoxication from the ‘Earth.’

Earth, boundless and vast.

Earth, akin to the love of parents and tolerance for their child.

Earth was the foundation of the World. The inexorable growth of plants, the aroma of flowers dispersing through the air, birds flying freely in the sky, and the gurgling water flowing through the creeks... Everything was just a small piece of the Earth. Since the founding of the Myriad Existences, the Earth was filled with vitality, and in return, the Myriad Existences were able to sustain life because of the Earth, never going back to the void of its empty past.

“Earth.”

“The World.”

Xue Ying shut his eyes.

He immersed his soul completely into this feeling. He had sensed this feeling in the past but never fully grasped it until today when Xue Ying finally perceived in full the beauty of the Earth. It could be seen in every particle of mountainous soil, forming the vast and boundless Earth in its entirety.

“Even though a single particle of soil might not seem very beautiful, the aggregate of these countless fragments result in the formation of the Earth!”

.....

Sitting cross-legged on the peak of the snow mountain, this black-robed youth was entirely immersed in the endless beauty of Earth.

Specks of yellowish light began to appear and revolve around him.

This endless brilliance...

Was like a mother's warmth in her womb, encompassing all.

Xue Ying's Profound Mystery of Earth had entered the first level of comprehension in the Realm of Myriad Existences.

All Profound Mysteries of Myriad Existences were extremely vast and boundless, with various paths to comprehending any single Mystery.

Some understood the Profound Mystery of Space as a form of teleportation, like Pu Yang Bo! While others comprehended the Profound Mystery of Shadow Space like Yu Feng! Some understood the aspect regarding Space Edge like Zhang Peng!

With the same logic...

The first step into the Profound Mystery of Earth had many different directions.

What Xue Ying first understood about the Profound Mystery of Earth was the concept of acceptance—to show tolerance for everything and to accept them as they were.

\*\*\*\*\*

He remained seated on the peak of the snow mountain for a fortnight. As a result, drifts of snow had accumulated on him, making him seem like a snowman. Clearly, this unprecedented immersion into the beauty of the Earth had led to the addition of Earth into Fire, Water, and Wind, with each element mutually aiding one another. This collaborative fusion of the elements led to a faster pace of overall comprehension.

*Peng!* The accumulated snow suddenly exploded outwards.

Xue Ying stood there in its place.

*Who would have thought that I would be able to attain the second level of Myriad Existences in the Profound Mystery of Earth in a single seating,* Xue Ying thought, startled at his own pace of comprehension. His own Profound Mystery of Fire took approximately seven years to reach the second level from the first.

As for the Profound Mystery of Water, it took him one to two years. The Profound Mystery of Wind took even less than that! But this time, the Profound Mystery of Earth had actually taken only half a month!

The main reason was that these four different Profound Mysteries were able to fuse with each other easily.

By choosing the correct path, his efficiency in comprehension was correspondingly extremely fast.

Originally, he became aware that his spear techniques were too rigid and easily broken due to his comprehension of Fire. After identifying the problem, Xue Ying added the Profound Mystery of Water. He found the fusion between the two elements to be very natural.

When he felt that his arts lacked flexibility and adaptability, he comprehended the Profound Mystery of Wind. Fusing Wind with Water and Fire was relatively easy since flexibility and adaptability were attributes in which he was lacking.

And now, he had just completed the comprehension of the Profound Mystery of Earth from the concept of acceptance. Naturally, Earth would fundamentally accept not only the elements of Water, Fire, and Wind, but also all of the other Myriad Existences! Therefore, as Xue Ying comprehended the Profound Mystery of Earth, the rate of fusion between the four elements would naturally be very fast.

And also... ever since he had become a Saint, his soul had become much stronger, giving rise to a greater rate of comprehension!

*I wonder if it will affect the current equilibrium of the Embryonic Form of True Meaning of Extreme Piercing.* Xue Ying frowned at the thought. That was his biggest worry.

Even though, in his heart, he felt that there should not be any problem with following this path...

But he was not absolutely certain.

The fusion of Profound Mysteries... was not about how many Mysteries were fused, but it was about balance. Originally, he had a very difficult time fusing Water, Fire, and Wind to form the Extreme Piercing. If he added another

Profound Mystery, it might really destroy the equilibrium of the beautiful painting he had originally created with merely a few brushstrokes on the work of art. That would annihilate the Embryonic Form of True Meaning! Regardless, he still reasoned that the Point of Extremity was the origin of all existences, and it was also the end of everything. As long as the elemental fusion was good, there should not be any imbalance...

That was merely a theory!

Hypothesizing and doing were two different things. Everybody knew about Space and Time, but how many could actually comprehend either?

*Let's just try.*

Xue Ying continued walking down the snow mountain, striding on the great Earth.

As he traveled to various places, he passed by the villages and observed the lives of the people who lived there.

He walked in their midst, but at the same time, he was alone.

This sort of loneliness...

Xue Ying felt slightly joyful. Having read through countless books on Demigods, he remembered a quote from one of the volumes: "Only when the soul of a human understands the feeling of loneliness does true wisdom shine! On the contrary, if a man always mixes amidst the company of others, his soul will be enveloped with a layer of dust, causing himself to be mired and hoodwinked into believing he is wise. Loneliness... will purify the soul, scouring it clean into a brilliant state, and naturally, wisdom will follow."

Xue Ying finally understood the meaning behind this saying.

In his youth, Xue Ying practiced his spear and ignored all other distractions. While he lived in the Snowrock Castle, he disregarded other everyday routines. Like a fanatic, he solely focused on practicing more and more, allowing him to achieve unparalleled advancement. After such improvement, he continued on by living by himself in a bamboo house at the back of the mountain without any servants.

After becoming a Transcendent and entering the Xia Capital, his situation drastically changed. He entered the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World and came under intense scrutiny by Faction Head Si Kong Yang and Senior Master Gong Yu. They excessively berated him! This constant scolding caused him to feel hesitant about his own decisions. Time after time, he questioned his own actions. He read through all of the countless books on his ancestors... before finally, his inner heart became certain of the path he had chosen for himself. Despite the criticisms of Faction Head Si Kong Yang and the others, he had decided he would walk on his own road with his heart fully supporting it.

At that time, Xue Ying had willingly accepted any loneliness and hardships he may experience while traveling along his chosen path. Henceforth, his heart became firm, and the disturbances of others around him no longer had an effect. This change increased the rate of his improvement, leading to his comprehension of the Embryonic Form of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing at the completion of the Mountain Road Mission.

After returning to his hometown...

He traveled to different locations, observing the lives of mortals before he finally entered a state of true loneliness! Since becoming a Saint, his soul had become even clearer and brighter, but it wasn't until now that he finally realized what he lacked in himself—the Profound Mystery of Earth!

This Profound Mystery that gave birth to acceptance for all other Myriad Existences had been what he needed!

*Creak...* In the northern part of Tranquil Sun Province, a group of bandit corpses lay at his side. Several survivors from the caravan stood still in a state of shock.

“Thank you, Great Sir, for saving our lives.”

“Thank you, Great Sir.”

These members of the caravan group included old men, young adults, and even children. After all, with this sort of long journey, there would always be some family joining the caravan for safety in numbers.

“Take the weapons of these bandits. Quickly head out and travel toward the

city ahead,” Xue Ying said. His figure flashed before entering a huge mountain nearby. Outwardly, he appeared as a person with the combat level of a Silver Moon Knight. As a Transcendent seeking traces of demons, he had to be alert. After all, demons were searching for Transcendents as well.

At the peak of the mountain.

Standing at the peak, Xue Ying overlooked the remaining members of the caravan who left on their journey. Shaking his head, he thought, *Bandits are everywhere. Even though their work is beneficial to the entire Xia Clan, these mortals are leading difficult lives. It brings me heartache to see them live as such.*

He understood this from reading many books.

Due to their hard work and suffering from the very beginning, the Xia Clan had been able to survive in this Mortal World. As the mortals experienced many trials and lived a life of hardship with bandits all around... under such threats did the mortals strive to improve and overcome their current plight, leading them to join the army and study the art of Qi or magic. Only through the many life and death situations could they refine themselves into becoming stronger.

With only peace in the world, very few would choose the difficult path of training in life and death situations, leading to a decrease in the number of Transcendents emerging from the Xia Clan. Generation after generation, the strength of the Xia Clan would erode... until finally, they would lose their status as conquerors of this Mortal World or even be exterminated!

*I hope in the near future, my Xia Clan will become stronger and stronger, allowing these mortals to not live in such plight,* Xue Ying thought to himself. The Dong Bo Lie couple had always treated these commoners very well. The taxes on the people living in their land had been one of the lowest, and they put their best efforts toward protecting them. Therefore, the Dong Bo Lie couple had always been loved by the people. Xue Ying grew up in such an environment, and he naturally wanted the commoners to have a better life.

*Xiu.*

Xue Ying casually stabbed out his finger.

His finger penetrated through layers of space, before disappearing and appearing at a distance 0.3 meters away.

Extremity Piercing!

Xue Ying revealed a grin. *The equilibrium is not broken.*

The fusion of Earth to Fire, Water, and Wind was not detrimental to the True Meaning at all. Time after time, he examined and adjusted the fusion before finally reaching a stage of perfection.

*The current Extreme Piercing became more stable. Its penetrative power rose by three times.* Xue Ying estimated. Even though it rose to three times its original power, it was still only the Embryonic Form of a Second Grade True Meaning.

The increase of penetrative power was a small matter.

More importantly, this fusion of Earth, Fire, Water, and Wind did not destroy the Embryonic Form of True Meaning of Extreme Piercing. A Second Grade True Meaning... that was in the same grade as the perfected True Meaning of Space. Right now, it was merely at its Embryonic Form. In the future, once he perfectly grasped the full and entire True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, it would result in a huge qualitative change. By then, he would be able to shoot up into the sky! Even though Xue Ying's dream was to reach the perfection of his spear techniques, the annihilation of a Second Grade True Meaning would certainly make his heartache at the loss.

---



## Chapter 30 – The Star

---

Snowrock Castle.

A stream of light shot down from the sky. With a flash, a figure appeared in front of the castle.

“It’s Eldest Young Master.”

“Eldest Young Master is back.” The castle guards all cheered. Even though Dong Bo Lie had become the Marquis and recovered ownership of the Snow Eagle territory, Xue Ying still remained the Eldest Young Master within the Snowrock Castle.

The city gate opened.

Entering the city, Xue Ying stared at Jing Qiu, who was garbed in white. He thought she looked like a Deity, standing there as she waited for him. Amongst all of the Transcendents of the Xia Clan, she was recognized as the number one beauty. This implied that she was the most beautiful woman in the entire Xia Clan, Transcendent or not! Because the Snowrock Castle guards and servants, both male and female, were affected by her overwhelmingly beautiful appearance, she employed a small magic that blurred her image.

“Disciple Brother Xue Ying!” Jing Qiu said, elated to see him.

“Jing Qiu,” replied Xue Ying as he walked to her. She wrapped her hands around his arms in a natural manner.

The two had long become intimate.

“Why are you just now finally returning home? I arrived half a month ago.” Jing Qiu laughed. “Are you that focused on searching for traces of the demons? From what I heard, many Transcendents haven’t even found one. The demons have

apparently hidden themselves completely.”

“I began to ponder my spear techniques and carelessly forgot about time,” Xue Ying replied. “Regardless, I did kill a rank four demon during my hunt.”

“Ah, you killed one?” Jing Qiu was startled. “And it was a rank four demon?”

A Transcendent who killed a rank four demon would be rewarded with 10,000 contribution points. That incentive was enough to cause many Transcendents to put in their best effort. Killing a rank four demon was immensely difficult. Such a demon possessed combat power that could match Saint Transcendents in the top thirty to ten in the rankings.

“Please keep it a secret,” Xue Ying said.

“Mn, mn.” Jing Qiu nodded. Her heart swelled with pride and happiness for him. How long had he cultivated? Yet, he was already able to kill a Saint realm ranked demon. In the future, he would most likely become a Demigod.

“Brother!” A group of people walked out to welcome him. This group included the handsome Qing Shi, his girlfriend Dai Ya, Dong Bo Lie, his wife, Uncle Zong, and Uncle Tong. As for Dai Ya’s older sister, Dai Lu, and her boyfriend, Kong Yuan Feng, they had returned to the Eternal Wind Academy a long time ago.

Upon seeing this group of people welcoming him, Xue Ying could not help but smile even more brightly.

He was home with his loved ones.

.....

Transcendents were required to spend half a year searching for demons; the other half could be spent resting.

Almost every single Transcendent scheduled their time in this manner. As for Xue Ying, regardless of whether he was at Snowrock Castle or searching for demons, he would always be deeply pondering his spear techniques.

The demons were securely hidden. Only those low level rank one and two demons, who could not control their desire to devour human souls, were not well hidden. Those were the few isolated cases. After those demons with poor

self-control were found and eliminated over a couple years, the Transcendents of the Xia Clan realised... that the ones they had found and eliminated were just rank one and two demons.

The entire Xia Clan understood.

This was the calm before the storm! Demons were vicious fighters. They were extremely violent and would never uncharacteristically hide from the world. This current state where demons remained in hiding would not continue for long.

Xue Ying used this period of peace to further refine his spear techniques.

*Hu hu hu~*

The cold wind whistled by as snow fell from the sky.

A new year, year 9665, began. The beginning of a new year was also the coldest period of a year. Within the vast peak of Snowrock Mountain, Jing Qiu walked toward the distant Xue Ying and watched as he practised his spear techniques.

Extreme Piercing was a purely offensive type of True Meaning.

Currently, Xue Ying sought to add another Profound Mystery to perfect his spear techniques.

And today...

He had finally fully fused the Profound Mystery of Earth with Water, Fire, and Wind to form a single entity! This feeling of the vast and boundless Earth merged together with his other Profound Mysteries as a single body...

*Hong long long~*

As he worked toward a perfected union of the Profound Mysteries, Xue Ying would adjust his technique, time after time. His spear techniques changed as he adjusted his use of the laws of Profound Mysteries in his search for perfection.

*Disciple Brother Xue Ying will usually take a break after practising for three hours. Why is he still continuing without stop today?* Jing Qiu thought, puzzled by his behaviour. She had come over to remind him that it was time for lunch.

“Sister Jing Qiu, why did my brother not stop for lunch? The dishes are going to

get cold,” Qing Shi asked. *Sou sou*. In a flash, his figure rushed over, stopping beside her with a curious expression.

“Don’t be in a rush; otherwise, you will disturb your big brother’s training,” Jing Qiu answered. “Since your brother is practising without a break, he must have his reasons. You should go ahead and start eating with the rest. Don’t wait for us.”

“Okay.” Qing Shi watched his brother momentarily, before murmuring, “I really don’t understand why he practices so diligently.”

*Sou sou*. He left the mountain.

Qing Shi’s comprehension of the realms was too low when compared with Xue Ying’s current comprehension. Even though Xue Ying provided his little brother with the nourishing treasures given out by the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World, his little brother still remained as a Silver Moon Mage. Making it to the Legend rank... was clearly not an easy task. As for Xue Ying, ever since he had become a Saint, those external resources could not be of much help to him. Only the truly rare and precious resources could aid him in his cultivation, but they were too precious. Even with 50,000 kilograms of Origin Stones, he would not be able to buy many resources of such value. Likewise, the benefits these rare and expensive resources would provide to his cultivation would not be too great. Since that was the case, he would rather spend time focusing on cultivating in a bid to improve at an even greater pace.

The snow fell more and more heavily as time passed.

Jing Qiu felt the intangible power wrought by Xue Ying’s spear techniques becoming greater.

*Hong hong hong ~*

Xue Ying’s spear technique suddenly became extremely heavy. Every single move was capable of creating terror in the hearts of anyone watching his practice. The space surrounding him froze, and a gigantic sphere was formed within a hundred meters of him. The inside of this sphere was distorted, obstructing the view of its interior.

*What happened?* Jing Qiu thought as she watched nervously. She discovered

that the terrifying might emitting from that sphere of a hundred meters in diameter could crush her to death with just a single touch.

As for what was happening within the sphere...

The cliff Xue Ying had been standing on had already turned to dust. His entire person floated in mid-air.

At the point when the Profound Mysteries of Earth, Fire, Water, and Wind merged together as a single entity, and the union reached his desired idea of perfection, everything changed qualitatively. The surrounding space froze, and the gravitational force changed in a barely detectable manner... Xue Ying felt as though he was able to see that vast snowy plains to the north, or the boundless desert, a land of oasis, or even just a simple, plain field...

The snowy plains, desert, oasis, field and mountainous road... they all had weeds growing, dead trees lying on the ground, rivers flowing, wild beasts flying and running, people surrounding a campfire and dancing, villagers cooking with smoke rising from the chimneys, armies galloping on their horses and causing the earth to tremble...

The wind blew, causing seeds from flowers to germinate and grow... The water flowed, allowing soil to improve and organisms to grow... The fire sparkled, allowing man to depend on it for warmth...

And all of these existences merged in an extremely fast manner, becoming smaller and smaller.

Or maybe it was his horizons expanding further and further..

Xue Ying *saw* it all.

The vast and boundless great Earth merging back to its origin—becoming a single, spherical body!

And that was a piece of a star!

The star would slowly revolve, and the Myriad Existences would begin growing on its surface. Man and Beast would co-exist together within.

*Star?* Xue Ying thought he vaguely understood.

The great Earth was willing to sustain the Myriad Existences, and finally, it

would become a single piece of a Star! And it was the most perfect star of all.

That was right.

To truly become accepting of all existences, it would require reaching Grand Completion, without any boundaries or edges. As for the Star, it represented a perfect sphere. Every single piece of Earth was equal. A star... would be the shape representing the most perfect condition that conformed to all laws of nature and of the world.

---

# Chapter 31 – Undercurrent

---

Xue Ying was currently high up in the sky.

With him at the center, the area up to a hundred meters surrounding him was distorted, and the surface of his body was vaguely blurred by the protection of the Profound Laws. It felt as if within this space, his entire self had become the sole overlord with everything revolving around him.

*I never thought that by using Earth to sustain Water, Fire, and Wind, I would be able to grasp hold of the Embryonic Form of the True Meaning of Star,* Xue Ying thought.

The True Meaning of Extreme Piercing...

Had never been documented as part of the nine different grades of True Meaning within the records passed down from the Deity World. On the other hand, the True Meaning of Star was actually mentioned in the records.

This True Meaning of Star was a grade two True Meaning within the nine grades of True Meaning in the Deity World!

A grade two True Meaning was spoken of only in legends. Its might was undisputably mysterious! Those who grasped hold of the True Meaning of Star were extremely terrifying characters. Their bodies could transform into Stars! And with this external defence, it would be akin to how Stars and the Earth were immovable! With just a movement of their limbs, it would be like a Star smashing over!

Furthermore, after gaining the bodily characteristics of a Star, their surroundings would be able to produce gravitational force! Those who grasped hold of the True Meaning of Star had the ability to affect the gravity of their surroundings during battle... and any ordinary Saint realm Transcendent would

be afraid of entering this area for fear that their bodies would collapse. Their bones would be smashed into pieces from the gravitational force, and inevitably, they would die.

This was a grade two True Meaning with balance in terms of its defensive and offensive capabilities.

As for the Extreme Piercing which Xue Ying grasped hold of, it was at the end of the offensive spectrum with an extremely powerful attacking power! Right now, however, he had comprehended only its embryonic form, and thus, its true might was not fully revealed.

In reality, there were some True Meanings like the True Meaning of Space that were extremely balanced in terms of offensive and defensive power amongst the grade two True Meanings.

An expert who grasped hold of the complete True Meaning of Space would be able to easily swim through any ordinary space, shadow space, spaces between different realms, and many other varieties. Teleportation and penetration through space was an easy task for them. They could even control space itself to toy with their opponents and kill them...

The True Meaning of Star was equally powerful!

It was also well-balanced.

Once the body became a Star, it would be immovable like the Earth, and its offensive power would be even greater! Furthermore, the gravity around the body could be used to suppress the enemy.

In a battle, it would be akin to using a Star to crush the enemy from all fronts!

Even though it wasn't an unpredictable might, this kind of direct suppression would still create extensive trouble for an enemy.

*A grade two True Meaning, Xue Ying contemplated. Extreme Piercing is a grade two True Meaning, and so is the True Meaning of Star. Right now, I have grasped hold of the embryonic forms of two different grade two True Meanings.*

Since he had grasped hold of their embryonic forms, he could only continue down the paths and perfect it. Before long, he would be able to transform them



into complete True Meanings.

Two different grade two True Meanings...

That was truly heaven-defying.

*At the very least, there are many gaps in my spear techniques that are covered up by my comprehension.* Xue Ying displayed his spear techniques. As the spear danced about, every single move brought with it a fierce might, equally powerful in both offensive and defensive strength.

*Such a pity it's not a grade one True Meaning.* Xue Ying revealed a grin.

Indeed, he had this strand of wishful thinking.

Earth, Water, Fire, and Wind might really have a chance of forming a perfected grade one True Meaning! But what exactly would it entail? A grade one True Meaning appeared only in the legends of legends... and represented a perfect, top-tier True Meaning. In every aspect, regardless of whether it was the True Meaning of Illusions, Strength, Agility, the Realms or the Soul, Life or Death... a grade one True Meaning would be perfect in all areas.

For instance, a man who grasped the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing... even though he could not control time, when faced with a True Meaning that could control time, the threat it posed would be drastically reduced. After all, his figure would be like a Point of Extremity; against Time Acceleration, Time Stop... they would have a much reduced effect against just a single Point of Extremity.

Thus, all experts who could control a grade one True Meaning were extremely terrifying people.

And as the True Meaning became further refined, it would become even more enigmatic and mysterious.

The True Meaning of Star had heaven-defying defensive and offensive power, as well as a domain of gravity... yet it was marked as only a grade two True Meaning. Nonetheless, it was an extremely powerful True Meaning.

This did not mean that fusing more Profound Mysteries would result in greater formidability, however, as it could create an effect similar to adding details to a masterpiece and destroying the entire art piece! He had spent a long time

contemplating how to cover up the weaknesses inherent in his Water, Fire, and Wind. Fortunately, he had a sudden revelation when he saw the northern Snowy Plains that served as an inspiration for him, resulting in an unhesitant decision to comprehend the Profound Mysteries of Earth!

*A Grade one True Meaning isn't that easy to comprehend.* On the contrary, Xue Ying did not feel that disappointed in himself. Instead, he was relatively happy.

A grade one True Meaning...

Was only a dream for him!

He set it as a side-goal, hoping to achieve it in his dreams. In reality, it would be normal for him to be unable to achieve this goal. That was because comprehending a grade one True Meaning ... was just a legend, even in the Deity World or the Dark Abyss!

If he achieved it, then that would be a heaven-shaking surprise!

For now, he felt satisfied comprehending the embryonic form of the True Meaning of Star. After all, the Extreme Piercing had been too skewed in terms of offense. Even though it gave him a terrifying attack power, it left too many gaps and weaknesses in other areas, making it easier for his enemy to target and restrain him using those weaknesses. With the True Meaning of Star, he felt that these areas of weakness had finally been covered without any obvious and revealing gaps.

*Hu.* Controlling the force, Xue Ying began to reabsorb the energy, and with him at the center, the hundred meter radius void started dissipating.

Snow continued to fall from the sky.

The piece of cliff he had previously been standing on, however, had disappeared. Walking on the air, Xue Ying headed towards the distant Jing Qiu who was currently looking at him.

"Disciple Brother Xue Ying, seeing how good your mood is, I bet you must have achieved something good?" Jing Qiu felt excited for him.

"Mn." Xue Ying nodded.

“Looking at that previous void sphere, it seemed really terrifying. I myself felt as if I would die the moment I entered!” Jing Qiu exclaimed in admiration.

“There’s still a long way to go. That’s merely the embryonic form of a True Meaning,” Xue Ying replied.

When a True Meaning was still at the stage of an embryonic form, it was extremely weak.

The gravity domain merely encompassed an area of a hundred meters! And its power was very weak. Any peak stage Sky realm Transcendent would die the moment they stepped into the domain! The gravity would immediately affect every single part of the body, even the organs and viscera as well as the brain. Thus, for anyone below the peak stage of Sky realm, the inner part of their brain would immediately be distorted and turned into paste.

For his gravity domain to instantly kill a peak stage Saint realm Transcendent, however, he would have to wait until he could control the complete True Meaning.

“Let’s go. We should head back.” Xue Ying looked at the colour of the sky. “It’s going to be time for dinner soon.”

“In the afternoon, Qing Shi had come over to ask you to come down for lunch. Fortunately, I asked him not to wait. If I didn’t, he would have waited until the sky darkened.” Jing Qiu laughed.

“Qing Shi...” Xue Ying nodded lightly.

When he was young, he had loved his brother too dearly.

Even though his brother started changing after seeing him fall into the Black Wind Abyss, this personality of his had already been imbued deeply and would be difficult to change. In his opinion... even though his brother seemed to be quite diligent and considered a genius amongst mortals, he was missing a sort of single-mindedness from his experiences—a single-mindedness that would allow him to forgo all mortal matters and focus with his entire heart and soul on cultivating.

*Let’s forget about it. Even though I reminded him many times, cultivating is ultimately a path no one can help with. I protected him too much when I was*

*young*, Xue Ying thought. If given another chance, he would still not be willing to treat his little brother too strictly.

Xue Ying and Jing Qiu walked side by side to the Snowrock Castle.

The two of them left behind an unbroken trail of footprints on the snow.

This day seemed ordinary.

Yet in reality, the existence who grasped hold of two different embryonic forms of grade two True Meanings had emerged.

\*\*\*\*\*

The days passed by.

The Transcendents of the Xia Clan tried their hardest in searching for demons, wanting to kill them to satiate their thirst.

Yet all of the demons had long hidden themselves from the World of the Xia Clan, causing a time of peace.

Year 9665, November.

The waves smashed against the cliff. On one of the solitary mountains by the side of the cliff, there was an extremely desolate castle. Inside the castle, there were many guards patrolling the grounds. This location was the home of a powerful Demigod belonging to the Xia Clan.

Before the invasion of demons, most Demigods spent their time cultivating with the hopes of becoming Deities. Thus, it was not unusual for them to find a quiet and desolate place to concentrate on cultivating. Cultivating beside the sea was quite an ordinary matter for them.

*Chi chi chi~*

Within the castle, within a secret hall, there were two large, black oil lamps emitting the *chi chi chi* sound. The oil inside the lamps was glowing red. And yet, when it was burned, a green-coloured flame emanated from it. A mild and strange smell enveloped the entire hall.

A figure stood there. His entire body was enveloped by a black fog, making it hard for anyone to clearly see his appearance.

In front of him, there was a crystal ball floating mid-air.

Above the crystal ball, there were five different images. These pictures contained terrifying demons of different appearances. There was an icy-blue, big and tall demon, a purple-armored, thin and small demon, an enchanting, crimson-scaled female demon, a demon with a lofty body figure...

“Five Generals,” said the figure enveloped in black fog.

---

## Chapter 32 – Conquer

---

“High Priest,” the five Demon Generals greeted.

The fog-covered figure was none other than the High Priest of the Demonic Faction—someone of the highest status!

Even though many Transcendents of the Xia Clan were willing to fight for the survival of mortals and the Xia Clan, there would always be a selfish minority who would rather back the Demonic Faction. The Demonic Faction, however, was weaker than the Xia Clan by an entire level in terms of their overall might, so they could only hide in the darkness. Every Transcendent who joined the Demonic Faction would keep their identity a secret, and even more so the High Priest, who held the highest status within the organization.

Even when communicating with his five other Demon Generals... he would still keep his identity hidden.

“Congratulations, Generals, for signing the Dark Abyss Agreement,” said the figure enveloped in fog.

“Hmph, congratulations? I think it should be us congratulating your Demonic Faction. From now on, our fate is truly tied with yours, and your Demonic Faction will certainly be rewarded with the beliefs of this Xia Clan’s World. This will undoubtedly aid the Demonic Faction greatly,” replied the lofty demon with a snort.

“Obtaining the belief of the entire Xia Clan’s World isn’t something we can achieve within a single generation,” replied the figure in the fog. “Unless, a Demonic God happens to emerge from you all.”

The moment a Demonic God emerged...

He would truly be undefeatable within the Mortal World. A Demonic God would only have a maximum time period of 10,000 years before he had to return to the Dark Abyss. And of course, this newly-emerged Demonic God would have to abide by the Dark Abyss Agreement in helping the Demonic Faction obtain the beliefs of this entire Xia Clan's World. After all, even if the demons kept humans in captivity and bred them, the demons had difficulty reproducing quickly. In time, there would be fewer and fewer demons left, and finally, the control of this world would still be relegated back to the humans.

Thus, the Demonic Faction had entered a negotiation with the demons before finally signing the Dark Abyss Agreement.

"Even though I look forward to one of you becoming a Demonic God, I'm sure all of you understand that the chances of that happening are quite low," said the figure in the fog. "Thus, what I look forward to most is for you five to help my Demonic Faction in obtaining a large portion of beliefs in this world instead."

"If you help scratch our backs, we'll certainly scratch yours," said the red-scaled female demon in an alluring manner. "Right now, we are all on the same boat. In the future, we'll have to ask High Priest to look after us as well."

"High Priest."

The tall, icy-blue Demon continued. "According to our agreement, you'll have to first provide all the records and maps of all Transcendent Worlds that are a part of the Xia Clan's World."

"No problem." The High Priest immediately passed them the maps through the crystal ball.

In fact, the negotiation between the two parties progressed smoothly.

After all, they knew what the other side needed, and there were no conflicting views! The reason why they only signed the agreement today was because the five Demon Generals were extremely prudent. They had been gathering information on the Xia Clan's World for many years through a great number of demons who had hidden their aura and mixed themselves amongst the humans.

In the Dark Abyss, these five Demon Generals experienced war time after time and certainly knew the importance of 'knowing thy enemies.'

Therefore, they were willing to spend a few years patiently understanding the situation behind the Xia Clan. Only after that did they decide to work with the Demonic Faction.

“Eight major Transcendent Worlds and a hundred minor Transcendent Worlds?”

“Very good.”

“We have been enduring silently for so long. I hope the Transcendents of the Xia Clan do not think we are willing to let it continue like this.”

“It’s time for us to make our moves.”

The five Demon Generals all held great expectations.

This was the crux of their plan! They had to make use of the minor Transcendent Worlds in order to gain an advantage against the Xia Clan.

“Then I wish you all success,” said the figure in the fog.

“Your Demonic Faction should be careful as well. We’re unable to recognise every, single Transcendent belonging to the Demonic Faction. Who knows, we might even kill one of you accidentally,” said the alluring, female demon. “I suggest they obediently hide themselves well. If not...should they reveal something, then killing them would be such a pity. Unless, of course, you are willing to divulge their identities.”

“I apologise. Their identities cannot be revealed,” said the figure in the fog. “Rest assured, my Demonic Faction’s Transcendents will definitely be careful.”

\*\*\*\*\*

Evening, within the borders of the Tranquil Sun Province.

Garrisoned beside the official road were a group of people setting up their tents and having a bonfire.

*Pu Chi. Chi.*

Currently, a slaughter was taking place within the group as armed members assassinated their partners in the dark. This was a common caravan, with the strongest among them a Heaven Knight. Facing this ambush without any prior



warning, the group being attacked was dead within moments. It seemed that this was an ordinary internal strife, and their killing methods were also nothing extraordinary.

“Alright, those hindrances have been taken care of.”

There were about a dozen people leftover standing beside the bonfire.

“Let’s go,” said one of the slender males. As he stretched his arms out, his fingers suddenly transformed into sharp, sinister claws, and the Demonic Energy from within was naturally released. If there were any Transcendents nearby scanning the area with the World Energy, they would immediately ascertain the presence of either a demon or a Transcendent of the Demonic Faction! Because the Transcendents of the Demonic Faction cultivated the path of Demonic Energy, there would naturally be Demonic Energy hidden within their bodies; it was only that they did not release it during normal occasions.

With just a swipe of his claws, *si la* —

The space was torn open.

“Let’s go!” This slender male released his Demonic Energy, bringing with him the other eleven people.

*Hu.*

After they entered the fissure, space began mending itself.

*Hu hu hu~* Currently, the group of people was situated within the turbulent layer in between space.

“Our General has already reached the outskirts of that minor Transcendent World! Help us protect it!” The slender man’s body started to transform into a black-scaled demon with a crimson horn. The others also began their transformations into their true selves. They were all demons! This time, they gathered because of orders passed down from the higher-ups. After traveling cautiously in their human disguises, they were able to gather in one place.

*Hong!* Under the lead of that black-scaled, crimson-horned demon, the group of demons penetrated through space, and within a few breaths’ time, they arrived at the other side of the space layer.

Looking ahead, they saw an oval-shaped world connected to the inner membrane of the Xia Clan's World.

"We are here." The purple-scaled, slender demon appeared in the sky. "There are no Demigods of the Xia Clan guarding this place. Let's go."

"Yes, General."

The dozen of demons acknowledged his order.

*Si la ~*

The membrane protecting this oval-shaped world was penetrated by the demons as they entered through it.

General Yan Ze had great expectations as he observed the situation. To ensure no mistakes were made, he sent a demonic avatar to monitor for any unforeseen circumstances! He was concerned not only because there may be Demigods of the Xia Clan present here, but also because this team he dispatched was too important to him. It was the most elite team of demons under him, with three out of six of his rank five demon subordinates.

Thus, should anything bad happen, he would have to pay a considerable price.

His demonic avatar had rushed over to check and see if there were any Demigods of the Xia Clan guarding this place, but that was merely an overly cautious act on his part. After all, there were over a hundred minor Transcendent Worlds, but how many human Demigods were there in total?

.....

Within the minor Transcendent World.

The dozen of demons flew across the sky with the black-scaled, crimson-horned demon leading. He coldly ordered, "This will be our future territory. I do not want to see any possible trouble that could appear. Kill every single, native Transcendent within this world! Leave none alive!"

"Yes."

There were three, rank five demons amongst them, six rank four demons, and a group of other rank three demons alongside several talented, lower-ranked demons.

Even a rank three demon was still comparable to an expert of the peak stage Saint realm! Not to mention the strongest among this group of demons could even match the might of the number one ranker on the Saint's ranking—a power that could fight against Demigods. Such a large team of powerful existences would be equivalent to having half of the Saint rankers coming together. Furthermore, all of them would either have an undying body or an extremely terrifying life energy. Thus, in a battle, even if the top thirty Saint rankers teamed up against them, they would still have a difficult time overwhelming this group of demons.

Also, the Saint's rankings were comprised of the top native Transcendents who were human or of the Beast Clan. Thus, if counting merely the top Saint experts from the human race, they would barely match up with this team of demons.

That was to say, they were matchless in this minor Transcendent World.

---

## Chapter 33 – Cheng Ling Shu

---

The Laws of the World in any Transcendent world were very simple and crude, giving birth to Transcendent natives who were weaker than Primordial Beings by a large extent. When compared with demons from the Dark Abyss, they were even weaker!

*Hu.*

A green-skinned Transcendent native was currently running with large strides. With a single step, he would cover a distance of 1.5 to 2 kilometers, which was faster than his flying speed.

Right now, he was in a panic.

*What is happening? Why are there so many demons? I thought they were still having an ongoing battle with the Xia Clan! Why are they here now in our Transcendent World? It's such a shock that sister Yue Ya died so suddenly. Damn, damn them!* The green-skinned Transcendent native had tears in his eyes. He and Yue Ya had been companions for so many years on this Transcendent World, and they had shared an extremely close relationship.

*Shua.*

A figure suddenly appeared beside that Transcendent native and, with a single step, stomped on him. His leg was covered in scales with extremely sharp claws at the end, giving it an abhorrent appearance. Fierce Demonic Energy was transmitted through the leg and twisted around the Transcendent native.

“You are quite talented in escaping, eh? Shrinking the distance you travel with an ability?” This demon dressed in black grinned. “You can count yourself lucky—I’m prepared to let you live.”

*Hua.*

At that moment, another group of demons appeared beside them.

“Wu Lang, I want this Transcendent native. He can actually reduce distance when he is running, so I believe he might be of help in the evolution of my True Meaning,” the black-shirt demon said.

“Alright,” the crimson-horned demon coldly replied. “As long as keeping him in captivity doesn’t bring me any trouble.”

“Rest assured,” the black-shirt demon replied.

“How many years have you been trying to improve your True Meaning of Wave? For a while now, there has been no improvements at all.” The crimson-horned demon snorted. “I suggest you just give up. You have no chance of triumphing over me at all.”

The black-shirt demon sneered but did not reply.

While they were both rank five demons, the crimson-horned demon’s combat power was greater than the other demon’s because he had grasped hold of a grade three True Meaning. As for the black-shirt demon, he had merely grasped hold of a grade four True Meaning—the True Meaning of Wave Domain. During his time in the Dark Abyss, he had always been on the search for an answer to comprehend other Profound Mysteries. He had even gone so far as to study other True Meanings to improve his current True Meaning of Wave Domain into the grade three True Meaning of Wave.

Actually, it was common to see the evolution of a True Meaning in the Dark Abyss, with many demons pursuing the advancement of their own True Meanings.

After all, their lifespans were extremely long.

For the sake of survival, most would initially grasp hold of a True Meaning as soon as possible, before thinking of a method to evolve it into a higher grade.

But they would still be extremely prudent during this sort of evolution! For instance, there had been the case of Emperor Yun Hai giving his good friend advice, causing his friend to run amok. In the end, his Deity Heart collapsed,

resulting in death!

.....

Within an hour, this Transcendent World had been completely cleared of Transcendent natives. Other than three natives who were captured alive, the rest were slaughtered.

After clearing the Transcendent World, the Demons began to build their own palace for their future residence.

Within two hours, an extravagant palace spanning across 50 kilometers had been completed, with different areas of the palace assigned to each demon based on their statuses.

“Contact the General.”

In the main hall of the palace, a group of demons had gathered according to the orders of the crimson-horned demon.

“Yes,” one of the smaller and weaker demon hurriedly replied in a respectful manner. The Demonic Energy emerged from within his body, forming a portrait of General Yan Ze.

“Wu Lang,” the purple-horned and thin demon General Yan Ze said.

“General, we have finished our preparations. We are currently waiting for your next order,” the crimson-horned demon said deferentially. The other demons were also showing their utmost respect to him.

Separated by a layer between different worlds, their communication wristbands would not work.

Due to the frequent wars within the Dark Abyss, however, the demons had long developed a method to counteract the lack of communication. The Demonic Gods were able to use a cruel method of linking some among the weaker demons to their heart! That way, even if they were separated by a membrane of space between different worlds, they could still sense each other via their souls. The only exception was when the distance between them was extremely large, with too many layers of space separating them. Besides that, in the Dark Abyss, there were too many weak and small demons. Thus, to these

Demonic Gods, the cruelty of this method was not a consideration.

Every Demon General would usually train up a few of these ‘Heart-Linking demons’.

\*\*\*\*\*

Year 9666, June.

“A Transcendent of the Xia Clan appeared!” The weaker demons reported to their superiors.

“Finally, a Transcendent of Xia Clan appeared. Let me confront him.”

“Let me.”

All of the demons were extremely excited and expectant of the battle.

“Don’t fight amongst each other. I’ll be the one going this time around!” The crimson-horned demon grinned as he licked his mouth with a long, scarlet tongue.

“Wu Lang, let me go this time around.”

“Wu Lang, you will still have more opportunities in the future. Let me go instead.” Two other rank five demons wanted to participate in the battle. The cruel instinct to fight was deep within the bones of these demons, giving them a great desire to battle and kill. Furthermore, by killing a Transcendent of the Xia Clan, they would have a chance to obtain the soul of a Transcendent! That would be absolutely more precious than ten thousands of mortal souls!

The crimson-horned demon sneered. “The two of you? Can the two of you even tear through space on your own?”

“We have underlings for that.” The two rank five demons were not willing to give up.

Amongst the rank four and three demons... some of them had innate talent related to space manipulation. This time, the majority of the rank three demons who came to this world had great talents in space-related Profound Mysteries.

“This is our very first retaliation, so it must be done without any mistakes. The best bet would be for me to go. The two of you should wait for the next chance.”

The crimson-horned demon grinned. “That’s decided then.”

*Hua.*

Instantly, a large amount of Demonic Energy was emitted from his body, condensing into a Demonic Avatar.

*Si la —*

The true body of that crimson-horned demon waved his hand, creating a tear in the space of the Transcendent World and allowing his Demonic Avatar to cross through it.

.....

The body of a Demonic Avatar was fully comprised of Demonic Energy. Because of its inability to absorb World Energy from the surroundings, every second of its existence would consume the Demonic Energy it had. The moment the Demonic Energy was fully consumed, it would dissipate, and the strand of soul on the Demonic Avatar would be destroyed. Thus, before running out of energy, a Qi Avatar or Demonic Avatar would try to return back to their true body as soon as possible.

*Shua.*

The crimson-horned demon’s Demonic Avatar tore through the inner membrane separating the worlds and entered the Xia Clan’s World once again!

*Shua!* His Demonic Avatar had long been told of the position and appearance of the Xia Clan’s Transcendent. Thus, he immediately tore through space to rush to his position.

.....

Cheng Ling Shu was currently standing within a mansion, fury depicted on her face.

The entire mansion had turned into a river of blood, and inside were many malnourished children wearing tattered clothes and trembling in fear.

“These dregs of society do not even have a single shred of conscience! They are not worthy of being humans!” Cheng Ling Shu was absolutely furious. Even after becoming a Transcendent, her personality remained cheerful and



straightforward. It was only when she saw such dark business that she would interfere!

“Children, stay here for a moment. There will be some people coming in a moment to bring all of you away.” Cheng Ling Shu consoled these children. Borrowing the World Energy, she had long realised that a group of men from the Dragon Mountain Manor had arrived outside the mansion.

She immediately left the scene.

*Shua.*

Even though she was a Transcendent Mage, she put on makeup to hide her appearance and battled using a sword to keep her identity a secret. With the body of a Transcendent and an extremely high understanding of the Realms... even with a sword, she would still be much stronger than many Legend Knight experts.

Casually, she left the mansion and walked around the outskirts of the building. She shook her head lightly.

Having lived for so many years, she had experienced many different situations, and thus, her mood began to recover.

Suddenly —

A terrifying and wicked aura appeared mid-air just a few kilometers away from her position.

*This is—* Cheng Ling Shu turned her head towards the wicked presence. With a single glance, she located the crimson-horned demon above the city. Without any sign of concealment, the demon wantonly emitted Demonic Energy, and the unseen pressure had long suppressed Cheng Ling Shu, creating terror within her. She immediately understood that her combat power was inferior to this demon's, and the difference was not by just a single level. *Why is this demon taking the initiative to release his aura? Why is he not concealing it?* she thought.

Cheng Ling Shu immediately sent a report to the Infernal Palace's higher-ups.

“Transcendent of the Xia Clan!” The crimson-horned demon's figure moved. In

a flash, he appeared beside Cheng Ling Shu and extended his hideous demonic claws over her head. “You are the very first Transcendent of the Xia Clan to be killed by us. You should feel honoured to die by my hands.”

*I’m exposed!* Cheng Ling Shu was shocked.

---

## Chapter 34 – Dream On!

---

Without hesitation, Cheng Ling Shu used the life-saving spell scroll she kept on her body at all times, releasing a layer of rippling light which shrouded her figure.

*Chi chi chi* — The crimson-horned demon attacked with his claws, leaving behind dense cracks in space. The moment his claws touched the light layer around Cheng Ling Shu, the protective cover trembled viciously as it lost a tremendous amount of its magical power.

“You are actually a Transcendent mage?” The crimson-horned demon’s Demonic Avatar attacked once again with his claws.

Immediately, Cheng Ling Shu used another life-saving scroll.

An undulating wave swept along her body as she tried to forcibly penetrate through the void to escape from her enemy!

“You still wish to escape even in front of me?” The crimson-horned demon sneered. Originally, he had planned on clawing Cheng Ling Shu with his right hand, but instead, his claws suddenly opened wide apart before grasping onto the void!

*Hong!*

The surrounding space within a hundred meters of the area immediately shattered! The space and everything within the radius—the walkways, the people bypassing the area, and the shops—were all completely destroyed...! The already weakened protective spell covering Cheng Ling Shu also broke apart completely. Unable to withstand this terrifying power, her figure broke into pieces.

This was the might of the grade three True Meaning—Shattered Space!

“Am I dead?” Even though her fleshly body had shattered into pieces, her soul still survived.

“Transcendent mages are always very troublesome to deal with. Just a single misstep, and you would have escaped.” The crimson-horned demon once again extended his hand. The Demonic Energy on his claws coerced and captured Cheng Ling Shu’s soul. After all, this was just a Demonic Avatar, and it could not swallow the soul into its body.

“I had originally thought that I’d experience battle after battle, killing several demons before dying with honour. Who would have thought that I’d be unable to kill a single demon before dying.” Cheng Ling Shu did not feel too remorseful. As a Transcendent, she had trained in many life and death situations, so she had already mentally prepared herself and accepted the fact that death would come one day.

“It’s just that I am really unwilling to die like this!”

“Still, my life has been quite a splendid journey already, haha!”

“However, demon, for you to wish to capture this big beauty’s soul so easily? Dream on!” Cheng Ling Shu’s transparent soul smiled, before it suddenly exploded.

“Ah ah ah! Damn, I really hate mages!” The crimson-horned demon became furious. A Transcendent mage’s soul actually self-destructed?

Transcendent knights and mages were quite different.

Transcendent knights did not have a great understanding of the soul, so it would be quite easy for their souls to be captured after being killed.

But mages were different. Usually, they would begin studying the soul and fleshly body at the Legend rank! Thus, most Transcendent mages...would be quite experienced in matters concerning the soul.

“So close!” The crimson-horned demon was unable to accept that he had lost a Transcendent mage’s soul. His actions were extremely fast, and as long as he had grasped hold of the soul, his opponent would have been unable to self-destruct. However, this female Transcendent mage of the Xia Clan did not have any hesitation! Any other ordinary Transcendent would have at least some

hesitation before self-destructing their souls.

“Hmph!” Picking up the storage treasure left behind, the crimson-horned demon’s Demonic Avatar immediately tore through space before leaving the scene.

.....

From the moment of his arrival, with just a few attacks with his claws, the battle had quickly ended!

With Cheng Ling Shu’s combat capabilities, she had been unable to resist the attacks at all, and at most, she could only depend on the life-saving magic scrolls. Unfortunately, she had not been able to escape.

The space within the domain had been completely shattered, and a large gouge could be seen on the path, completely devoid of anything. All of the bystanders in the distance who had not been affected were startled by this.

Soon after.

*Hu.* Old man Chao Qing tore through the void before appearing in this location. Following that, Chi Qiu Bai arrived through the space as well.

“Ling Shu.” Chi Qiu Bai’s expression turned pale. The relationship between Transcendents of the Tranquil Sun Province was quite good. Cheng Ling Shu had been one of the youngest among them with quite a refreshing and carefree personality. But who would have thought that she would die in the hands of a demon.

“Cheng Ling Shu was a Transcendent mage, and most Transcendent mages carry life-saving scrolls that allow them to escape from any peak stage Saint realm Transcendents. However, she did not escape successfully this time around?” Old man Chao Qing felt heartbroken. Compared to mortals, Cheng Ling Shu had been old, but when comparing her lifespan with the other Transcendents, she had still been quite young!

\*\*\*\*\*

“Jia!”

Xue Ying was currently riding a Snowstrider Horse on the official road as if he

were a lone traveler.

As he traveled, he used the World Energy to examine the surrounding hundred meters in diameter around him to monitor for any disturbances.

*Recently, two Transcendents have been assassinated at the hands of demons,* Xue Ying thought as he frowned. The Infernal Palace had sent down the orders, warning all Transcendents of the Xia Clan to be extremely careful—even when searching for demons, they had to disguise themselves as mortals! Other than using the World Energy to monitor for activities, they were forbidden from using any Transcendent power, in order to maintain their anonymity. Thus, he had to ride on a horse to travel to his destination.

But even when being prudent...

There were times when these Transcendents would reveal themselves carelessly. After all, most Transcendents had lived for over hundreds to thousands of years, and their disposition to act as such had long become a habit! Thus, in a moment of negligence, their daily actions could easily reveal traces of their identity as Transcendents.

Furthermore, in a dangerous environment, they would be forced to utilise their Transcendent power.

Thus, it was honestly very difficult to conceal one's identity.

"Transcendent Cheng Ling Shu has been killed by the demons!" The news was transmitted down by the Infernal Palace to all Transcendents of the Xia Clan.

Xue Ying who was currently riding on his horse suddenly became stunned.

He stared blankly into space while seated on the horse. As the horse did not receive any directions from him, it slowed down from a gallop to a canter. Eventually, it ambled to the side of the road, stopped and started to graze on the grass.

*Sister Ling Shu?* Xue Ying felt pain aching through his heart.

*"I am called Cheng Ling Shu. Next time, just call me sister Ling Shu. Calling me big sister feels weird for me."*

He could still remember clearly Ling Shu's first words to him.

*“Sister Ling Shu.”*

That time, Xue Ying had obediently greeted her as she had requested.

He could still remember that time when she had won big from gambling during his Transcendent Battle of Life and Death, causing her to be very excited.

After that, during Yuan Qing’s battle, she had once again won big, practically becoming a gambling god.

When Xue Ying had first met with the Transcendents from the Tranquil Sun Province, Cheng Ling Shu had actually been the youngest amongst all of them.

“Why... why...” Xue Ying did not dare to believe his ears. This extremely cheerful and carefree sister of his was actually the first one to die during the war against the demons—and so soon. He knew there would certainly be many Transcendents dying during the war against the demons, but he had not thought that sister Ling Shu would actually die just as the war began. She was a mage, and usually, mages had plenty of methods to survive, with most of them being able to successfully escape with their lives.

Some time had passed before Xue Ying awoke from his daze.

“Big brother Eternal Wind, where did sister Ling Shu die?” Xue Ying asked through his communication wristband.

“In a small city—Maple City,” Chi Qiu Bai replied.

*Sou!*

Xue Ying immediately shot up into the skies. His speed accelerated to the limits as he rushed towards the given location.

Even though the Infernal Palace had advised them to hide their movements in order to conceal their identities, Xue Ying could not care at this moment. So what if his identity was revealed? Rank four demons were not his match. And even rank five demons would not be able to kill him during the time taken for a breath. Furthermore, he had a protective treasure of the Xia Clan, giving him the ability to survive even against Demigod demons!

Maybe his current actions were quite impudent, but Xue Ying truly wanted to reach the location where his sister Ling Shu had died.

In just a short moment, he flew over 10,000 kilometers of distance.

*I'm here.* Xue Ying could see the small city below him. It was actually quite a beautiful city, with many maple trees growing within it. These maple trees had long become the icon of this city.

*Sou.*

Descending from the sky, he immediately arrived beside the conspicuous gouge within this small city. The area of a hundred meters in diameter around the gouge was currently being locked down. Chi Qiu Bai, old man Chao Qing and Si Kong Yang had already arrived.

"Xue Ying, you came." Chi Qiu Bai looked over.

"You flew over?" Old man Chao Qing's eyes widened before bellowing in anger, "Do you not know that the demons are all over, observing your every action? And yet, you flew over in such a pompous manner? Even if you flew at a high altitude and the possibility of them discovering you was low, does that mean it's impossible to be discovered? Do you want to die under the attacks of the demons, too?"

"Faction Vice Head," Xue Ying answered. "I have a protective treasure with me that can resist against Demigods."

Old man Chao Qing was startled. He turned towards Si Kong Yang who nodded in affirmation.

Only then did Chao Qing stop with his reprimand. He guessed that Xue Ying had used the contribution points obtained from turning in the Devil's Well to exchange for the protective treasure.

"Even still, you must be prudent." Old man Chao Qing sighed. "Ai, if this old man had died, then it would not have been such a big matter. But instead, it was this child Ling Shu who died. She is still so young..."

"Is there nothing left behind?" Xue Ying looked over the big gouge and the shattered surrounding space.

"The space is completely demolished." Old man Chao Qing shook his head. "Not even her body was left behind. It was only because she reported to the



Infernal Palace through her communication wristband before her death that we know she was here.”

“Did you find the demons who did this?” Xue Ying was doing his utmost to control his anger.

They had been very good friends for over thirty years.

Since the moment they had met in the Xia Capital, they had known each other for thirty years! And yet, she left the world with her body turning into ashes!

“I followed the traces left behind by the ripples of space, yet it ended in the layer between the realms.” Chi Qiu Bai shook his head, his eyes full of killing intent. “Damn! I’ll definitely find out who this damnable demon is. I’ll definitely find out!”

Chi Qiu Bai’s grievance in his heart was no less than Xue Ying’s.

After all, he had watched Cheng Ling Shu grow up from a young and talented mage, so he considered this pure-hearted female mage as a little sister of his.

---

## Chapter 35 – Indivisible

---

Xue Ying, Chi Qiu Bai, Chao Qing and Si Kong Yang were currently looking at the large gouge before them.

They could no longer find any traces of Cheng Ling Shu's body. The only thing they could do now was to pray for her where her body had shattered to pieces.

"Dust returns to dust. Soil returns to soil. Ling Shu, I pray for your wonderful journey to the afterlife!" Chi Qiu Bai softly prayed.

"Sister Ling Shu, we will definitely kill every, single one of those demons!" Xue Ying quietly mumbled as well. Even though his voice was soft, it was a sincere promise! If anybody else were to say these words, it would be construed as an empty boast. Or maybe they would think that such wars with demons were quite frequent and, like the ones recorded within the Xia Clan's history, would last for thousands of years. But Xue Ying was currently full of confidence. After all, he had grasped hold of two different grade two True Meanings. The moment he stepped into the realm of Demigods... he would be able to stand on top of every other Demigod in the entire history of the Xia Clan! He would become the strongest Demigod since the very first Demigod recorded within history, and, under his hand, he would wipe out all of those demons!

All he needed now was time.

Xue Ying could only keep all these feelings to himself, like a wolf silently sharpening its claws until it grew up.

"Having become a Transcendent, little lass, you should have gone through quite a fulfilling life!" Old man Chao Qing said.

"In the long history of the Xia Clan, there were many Transcendents who sacrificed themselves for the clan! Within this river of time, even though you

were one among many, every single one of you has certainly made my Xia Clan proud and can be considered heroes of the clan.” Si Kong Yang’s eyes were burning with fiery anger. “In my eyes, all of you have earned my respect, unlike those selfish Demigods who turned their backs against our clan and joined the Demonic Faction.”

Si Kong Yang was a very overbearing person who held himself with pride. Yet when facing the Transcendents who died for the Xia Clan during the war, he became extremely respectful.

.....

Xue Ying and Chi Qiu Bai soon separated.

Before leaving, Xue Ying bought a Snowstrider Horse from the city, riding it onwards as he continued his search for traces of demons!

Cheng Ling Shu had died during the battle against the demons. Xue Ying did not have many true friends even after living for so many years, so each and every one of them were extremely precious to him. Even though Cheng Ling Shu’s death gave him heartache, he could only suppress his anguish. After all, the war with the demons would still carry on! Deaths during wartime were extremely common. If they, as Transcendents, hid themselves in the battle against the demons, then the ones to suffer were the billions upon billions of mortals.

“Jia!” Xue Ying rode on his horse, galloping past the official roads. His facial appearance had transformed once again, this time into a middle-aged man with a stubble of white hair carrying a sword and bag.

\*\*\*\*\*

Although the Transcendents of the Xia Clan were extremely furious, they continued their search for demons in a careful manner. While they were searching for the demons and discovering them, the demons were also searching for Transcendents!

Every time the demons attacked the Transcendents, it would be the Demonic Avatar of a rank five demon!

To the majority of Xia Clan’s Transcendents, rank five demons... would be able to suppress them completely. The only ones capable of escaping with their lives

intact were some of the Transcendent mages who possessed unpredictable, life-saving treasures. Transcendent knights, on the other hand, would usually die after being discovered by the demons.

“In the past year, five Transcendents have been killed”

Within the Elder’s Hall located in the Infernal Palace of the Infernal World, the Elders of the Xia Clan were currently having a discussion. Even though they were each in charge of different regions of the mortal world, their Qi Avatars had gathered in the Xia Capital to discuss the matter of chasing after any demons who had surfaced.

“After tracking the traces left behind by demons, we’ve found that most of the trails end right in the middle layer between realms,” Palace Head Chen said calmly. “Also, the recent five deaths were caused by sudden assassination by demons! Every time, the Transcendents reported the demon’s presence to the Infernal Palace, they died before we had a chance to reach them! Due to their lack of combat power, they were suppressed completely.

“And when they discovered the demon, they all said the same thing—that the demon was extremely powerful! Clearly, these demons did not hide their aura at all when they attacked!

“Analyzing it from a different viewpoint—

“We can be almost certain that these damnable demons are currently dispatching their most powerful rank five and rank four demons into several minor Transcendent Worlds!” Palace Head Chen concluded.

“Hmph.”

The Sea Deity Palace Head, Senior Elder Chen, gritted his teeth. “Ever since the demons invaded our world, we set up detection arrays at the entrances to the minor Transcendent Worlds. Yet all this time, there have been no alerts from them! Clearly, these demons have been finding their way through the disordered space void in between layers. And for them to find the locations of all those minor Transcendents Worlds, I bet the information must be coming from the traitorous Demonic Faction!”

How big was the void in between space?

Furthermore, it was extremely dangerous to blindly search for the accurate position of minor Transcendent Worlds in the vast, disordered space void; it was also extremely difficult, unless they had entered the minor Transcendent World beforehand.

In addition, those entrances into the worlds had detection arrays! It was impossible for demons to be able to bypass those arrays without alerting the Xia Clan... Therefore, for them to enter with such ease through the space void, they must have had prior knowledge of the entrances and their accurate locations.

“Every time the demons invaded, the Demonic Faction must have collaborated with them. In their eyes, even if countless humans are killed, they don’t give a damn.” Si Kong Yang was extremely enraged.

“If they make a mess during peacetime, it doesn’t really matter much. But right now, they still dare to collaborate with the demons!” The cold eyes of the extremely enchanting City Lady Bu were filled with anger. She was the first person who discovered the invasion of demons and had slaughtered countless demons.

“Right now, I want everyone to think of a solution,” Mountain Lord He requested. “The minor Transcendent Worlds are places where Demigods cannot enter.”

“Ai...”

“How should we solve this issue?”

The Elders were all frowning.

They had plenty of ideas, but none of them decided to speak out. The history of the Xia Clan was long, and there were many different situations recorded during the wars against the demons! The current situation, however, could be considered as quite a conundrum!

“This is what I’m most afraid and worried about,” Palace Head Chen said. “Before this, we had set up so many detection arrays at the entrances of all those worlds, and yet, it was futile! With the help of the Demonic Faction, the elites amongst the demons have entered the minor Transcendent Worlds. We, as Demigods, have a huge advantage against the demons of equal realm, but

against those below the realm of Demigods... demons have an overwhelming advantage over us!”

The demons triumphed greatly because of their large numbers.

There were rumours that spoke of the endless number of demons in the Dark Abyss. For instance, there was an ocean in the Abyss where over 100 million demons were born.

Even though the passageway that connected the mortal world to the Dark Abyss was small, so many demons had already entered into this world.

“It can’t be helped. If only the Deity warriors could enter.” City Lady Bu frowned. “It’s such a pity that among the Laws of the World, there is one that classifies the Deity warrior as a Demigod existence.”

Deity warriors had been sent down by the ancestors of the Xia Clan.

All of them were extremely powerful and unfathomable! They had the combat power of a peak stage Demigod realm Transcendent with a hold of some powerful True Meanings.

Despite their strength, all of them had some deficiencies. Either they did not have a soul, or their souls were damaged. Refined by Deities, they were powerful combat warriors that could not be considered as living beings in the eyes of Transcendents and Deities. However, all of them had wisdom and the ability to think, allowing them to take control of different techniques and Profound Mysteries of the World to the extent of controlling a True Meaning! Thus, in the eyes of the Laws of the World, they were regarded as living beings.

Deity warriors could even match the might of a true Deity’s combat power in the Deity World. The ancestors of the Xia Clan were willing to send such powerful warriors into the mortal world, but it was a pity that the laws disapproved.

With a similar logic.

The minor Transcendent World had also forbidden the transportation of all Demigod grade treasures including Refiner Organisms and Transcendent beings. Otherwise, the Xia Clan would have long swept clean all Transcendent natives living in those worlds.

“We have no choice but to let some powerful Transcendent mages kill their way in, bringing with them some Demigod ranked magic scrolls and related treasures.” Mountain Lord He shook his head as he continued, “But according to our past experiences, once the demons enter those minor Transcendent Worlds, they will definitely build their nests and set up arrays! These arrays would even require a Demigod some time to break it down. If we were to ask the Saint realm Transcendents to go in, with their understanding of the realms naturally inferior to ours, the percentage of their success in breaking those arrays would be even smaller.”

Like the ones built at the Snowrock Castle, arrays had the power to trap a Demigod demon for a period of time!

As for the demons who invaded this world, they were members of a Demon Legion. As a legion, they would have considered all things and prepared beforehand. This time, they had assembled a total of five legion camps in five different minor Transcendent Worlds. Naturally, they had set up arrays in each of those worlds. These arrays... were even more formidable than the array set up in Xue Ying’s Snowrock Castle.

Illusions, entrapment, killing arrays...

In other words —

If Demigod experts had a high enough understanding of the realms and an endless supply of power in their body, they would be able to break those arrays if given enough time! After all, the arrays had a limited amount of energy stored within.

But what of Saint realm Transcendent mages? Bringing some scrolls with them would not do anything to those arrays.

“It seems that the Transcendents of this generation will have to sacrifice themselves.” Palace Head Chen’s eyes were pained. As Demigods, the number of deaths within their rank were extremely low. Below their rank, however, there would be more and more Transcendents dying in the future. If they did not go all out in attacking the demons by relying on this small number of Demigods from the Xia Clan, they would certainly not be able to protect their entire ancestral land.

“We have no choice.” Mountain Lord He shook his head.

---



## Chapter 36 – Attacking the Minor Transcendent World

---

Although Palace Head Chen and the other Xia Clan elders knew that these rank four and five demons had invaded the Minor Transcendent Worlds, the current situation was quite a conundrum!

But they couldn't give up!

History had shown that if these rank four and five demons were allowed to invade and colonize the Minor Transcendent Worlds, their Demonic Avatars would eventually turn their attention to ambushing the Xia Clan's Transcendents! If that situation arose, the Xia Clan would incur innumerable casualties. During a simple frontal fight against an ordinary demon, the Xia Clan Transcendents would normally be able to preserve their lives. But, when dueling a rank five demon's Demonic Avatar, the probability of survival was too low.

"This is their deadliest strategy!" City Lady Bu exclaimed, dissatisfaction exuding from her eyes. "Everyone, please think of a method that could lessen our Xia Clan's Transcendent casualties."

"Mn."

"I'll try my best to think of some plans."

"The lair constructed by those demons in the Minor Transcendent Worlds—perhaps they have weak magic arrays? Maybe we can try to break them."

Demigod Transcendent Mages also put forth several suggestions, only to have the other Demigods refute them!

In the process of proposing and refuting plans, many plans were eliminated, while others were improved and perfected.

.....

After three days of discussion, the elders decided on a plan. The top six Saint Transcendents, three of which were Transcendent Mages, would form a team. This team would take a treasure specialised in breaking magic arrays and send their Qi or Magic Avatars to raid the Minor Transcendent Worlds.

The main purpose of this venture was to break the magic array! If they were unable to break it, the only thing waiting for them was defeat.

\*\*\*\*\*

Half a month later.

All preparations were done. Mountain Lord He and City Lady Bu personally accompanied the top six Saint ranked Transcendents.

On a mountain peak where a cold, biting wind was blowing.

Mountain Lord He was waiting there.

“The six of you...”

City Lady Bu gazed at the Qi Avatars and Magic Avatars of the six Saint ranked Transcendents and said, “All of you know how important this mission is. You can only depend on yourselves after you enter the Minor Transcendent World! All of you must be cautious and try your best in breaking the array. Once the array is broken, you can use the Demigod’s Spell scroll and any other methods you possess to directly attack and kill them!”

According to their gathered intelligence, the demon legions had no way of matching the Xia Clan in terms of artifacts. The Demon Gods of the Dark Abyss were very stingy. There was no way for a Demigod there to get their hands on a Deity Weapon! The Xia Clan, on the other hand, had many Ancestors and Deities who were willing to refine powerful scrolls and treasures before their ascent to the Deity World. In this way, the Xia Clan accumulated precious artifacts generation after generation, and the inheritance they had amassed was astonishing!

Of course, over the long years, there had been many obstacles, so the Xia Clan had to use many of their resources.

“Equipped with Deity Weapons, our Xia Clan’s Demigods have an overwhelming advantage!” City Lady Bu’s voice was full of killing intent.

“Moreover, the Deity World soldiers are still not moving! Demon Generals have no way of entering the Minor Transcendent Worlds, so we need not worry about those Demon Demigods who can only hole up. Once they appear, however, we will attack and kill them!”

“As for those demons below the Demigod level, their numbers are too large!” City Lady Bu gritted her teeth. “They have the absolute advantage in numbers. If their elite rank four and five demons enter the Minor Transcendent Worlds, there would be no life threatening danger to their real bodies since they can just safely send their Demonic Avatar to ambush and assassinate us.”

“If it continues like this...”

“Looking at the record of our past wars with the demons, no matter how careful we are, or how many strategies or tricks we have, after a period of time... perhaps 80% of our numbers will perish!” City Lord Bu continued, “I do not want to see that scene! We, as Demigods, really hate our helplessness.”

“If you fail, then we will no longer have any hope.”

“This is our Xia Clan’s biggest crisis and biggest disaster!”

City Lady Bu looked at them. “As long as we can pass this crisis, the casualties from this war with the demons will be greatly reduced!”

If the demons hiding within the Minor Transcendent World dared to send their Demonic Avatars for any assassinations, the Xia Clan’s Demigods hoped to follow them through space and find their location! If the demons were inside the Mortal World and tried to mount a sneak attack with their Demonic Avatars, the Xia Clan’s Transcendents could even more easily detect their presence with World Energy. Not only their location, but even their lair could be found quickly.

“Understood.”

“City Lady Bu, we will do our best.”

“We will definitely do our best to destroy the array.”

The six Transcendents all responded.

They were selected because breaking an array required specific methods, which were more effective than sending a Demigod to break it! A Demigod had an advantage, however, in their endless power. They could use brute force to continuously attack and exhaust the array's energy.

As for the Transcendents?

In comparison, they were much weaker and only could depend on treasures. Moreover, a Demigod grade spell scroll was only equivalent to one attack by a Demigod! Even if they had a hundred scrolls... it was still only equivalent to a hundred attacks by a Demigod. How could it compare with a real Demigod's endless flow of attacks?

Even with information on the array, forcibly crushing and breaking it with artifacts could not be done half-heartedly. Yet from another perspective, they could afford to do so as the material and their supply of the treasures were not inferior in any way.

"It depends on you all."

Mountain Lord He and City Lady Bu led them through the void until they arrived near a Minor Transcendent World's membrane wall before directly ripping the wall apart.

Six Transcendent Qi and Magic Avatars entered, borrowing the World Energy to quickly investigate.

.....

There were numerous Minor Transcendent Worlds and could only be searched one by one.

After spending more than two hours checking over thirty Minor Transcendent Worlds, they finally found one where the demons were stationed.

"Xia Clan Transcendents incoming."

"Ha ha ha, come, come, let's see what these Xia Clan Transcendents are up to!" A lofty, heavily-guarded palace had already set up their array. This was because using arrays as their vanguard was a strategy frequently used by the demons, and it was certainly a very effective one. The rank four and five demons

leisurely watched Xia Clan's Transcendents' efforts to break through.

.....

In the void outside the Minor Transcendent World's membranous wall.

Mountain Lord He and City Lady Bu waited anxiously. Even at their level, they could only await the results.

These six were the most knowledgeable Saint Transcendents on the subject of magic arrays. They also possessed the most suitable treasures to break the magic array. If their joint attack couldn't break the array, there would be no other way to break it.

Of course, Mountain Lord He and City Lady Bu didn't know that Xue Ying had already grasped grade two True Meanings. This kind of information was top secret.

The six Transcendents did their utmost to break the array. Their real bodies also received advice from the Xia Clan's Demigods through their communication wristbands. Unfortunately, those Demigods had no way of seeing the array. An array had many fluctuations and other factors that couldn't be explained or pictured by a mere verbal description.

Two hours later.

"They fell into the array and are unable to advance or escape. They can't support their Avatars any longer and thus decided to use the treasure on it!" information came through.

*Hong~*

A crashing noise resounded.

Mountain Lord He and City Lady Bu, who remained inside the disordered space void, looked at the distant space membrane wall that had exploded. The inner part of the Minor Transcendent World also surged with energy. This attack had consumed many treasures, but the space membrane wall quickly restored itself.

"They couldn't even break the outermost array." Mountain Lord He sighed.  
"We had hoped for too much."

"Damn." City Lady Bu gritted her teeth, fury flashing through her eyes.

They had hoped—hoped that the demon legion was disorganized and that the array was weak one. In reality, it was the complete opposite. This was a perfectly organized legion with no major flaws. They also had a powerful array! The six Saint level Transcendents prepared by the Xia Clan couldn't even break the outermost array.

This fact completely shattered the Xia Clan's Demigods' vision!

---

# Chapter 37 – Unexpected Gains!

---

Xue Ying and Jing Qiu were currently walking towards the peak of Snowrock Mountain in the Snow Eagle Territory.

“Jing Qiu, you should return first. When it’s time for dinner, don’t forget to call me.” Xue Ying laughed.

“Mn.” Jing Qiu smiled before turning and leaving.

Looking at the retreating figure, Xue Ying felt an unseen pressure lashing out at his heart. His current life was extremely comfortable, but it could only exist as long as he stepped out of his comfort zone and protected it.

*The demons are becoming more and more tyrannic. I must improve my combat power to the stage of grasping a complete True Meaning as quickly as possible,* Xue Ying thought to himself. Thereafter, he cleared his mind and sat cross-legged on the ice-cold mountain peak. All the pressure within his heart was thrown to the back of his mind. Currently, he had his full concentration focused on the four Profound Mysteries of Earth, Fire, Water and Wind. He intended to first deepen his understanding of these four Profound Mysteries and then fuse them together again.

This was because whether it was the embryonic form of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing or the True Meaning of Star, both were formed from a fusion of the Profound Mysteries of Earth, Fire, Water and Wind.

*Illusions.*

Xue Ying began to contemplate.

On the mountain peak, six figures suddenly and silently appeared beside Xue Ying.

Six identical, black-robed Xue Ying's were deep in contemplation.

*Last time, I grasped hold of the embryonic form of the True Meaning of Illusions based on the Profound Mysteries of Water, Fire and Wind. Xue Ying pondered. As for the fusion of the Profound Mystery of Earth with the other three Profound Mysteries... it actually did not destroy the original embryonic form of the True Meaning of Illusions. Instead, it made it even stronger, as if the Profound Mystery of Earth was a huge boon to the embryonic form of the True Meaning of Illusions.*

As he continued contemplating...

He realised that... due to his comprehension of the Profound Mystery of Earth, his illusions had attained 'souls,' solidifying them—unlike the previous illusions which were purely ethereal.

As his comprehension of the concept of acceptance within the Profound Mystery of Earth deepened, he would continuously adjust the embryonic form of the True Meaning of Illusions by changing the method of how the four Profound Mysteries were fused.

Initially, he had used Water, Fire and Wind as the main base. The Profound Mystery of Earth was then fused into it bit by bit. He was afraid of destroying this embryonic form of the True Meaning of Illusions. Even though he already had two grade two embryonic forms of the True Meanings—Extreme Piercing and Star—Xue Ying still considered his Illusions as quite important. After all, when he truly mastered the grade three True Meaning of Illusions, the threat he posed to his enemies would greatly increase.

As time passed, however, Xue Ying realised one thing—the Profound Mystery of Earth was not just an aid to the True Meaning of Illusions; instead, it had become a crucial part of it. Compared to Water, Fire and Wind, its importance had become even greater.

Xue Ying continuously adjusted the method of fusion between Earth, Fire, Water and Wind, diligently pursuing an even more perfected form of True Meaning of Illusions.

*This is —*



The six Xue Yings suddenly became astonished

They looked into different directions.

The original mountain peak began to vibrate. Countless mountain rocks flew up towards this particular peak, causing it to accumulate and extend continuously, becoming bigger and bigger...

“Mn?” The six Xue Ying looked up towards the sky.

It was originally afternoon, yet right now, dark clouds were rolling over and were soon covering the entire sky, causing the entire area to become pitch-black.

*Si la ~*

The countless dark clouds suddenly ripped apart.

A huge palm instantly penetrated through the clouds to appear in front of Xue Ying.

The six Xue Yings all stood up at the same time.

“Retreat,” Xue Ying immediately said.

All of the dark clouds instantly retreated backwards.

The gigantic arm and palm that had appeared from within the void stopped in front of Xue Ying.

“Sunset, moonrise,” Xue Ying commanded once again.

The hanging sun high up in the sky quickly set in the west... and a huge round moon slowly rose in its place.

“The big sea.”

Xue Ying smiled.

The original mountain range now had endless waves of water gushing over, flowing amongst the mountains. The entire eastern area of the Snowrock Mountain turned into an endless sea of crashing waves and frothing shores. Gradually, the violent sea became tranquil and many fishing trawls appeared. In the distance, there were even seagulls flying in the sky and big fish leaping out of the surface of the water.

“So mystical,” Xue Ying said to himself.

*Shua —*

The gigantic palm; the endless sea; the accumulated, titanic mountains; the seagulls; fishing trawls; the dark sky; the moonlight...

They all disappeared!

Everything returned to its original state. It was still afternoon, and the Snowrock Mountain stood there as always. The many people within the Snowrock Castle were going on about their ordinary lives as if nothing had happened.

*A mirage?* Xue Ying’s heart was filled with excitement.

*Earth, Water, Fire and Wind could actually form the embryonic form of Mirage.* Xue Ying was extremely startled.

The True Meaning of Mirage was a grade two True Meaning.

In terms of offensive ability, it was ranked last amongst all grade two True Meanings. Grasping hold of this grade two True Meaning represented an offensive ability that barely reached the doors of the Demigod realm power. One must know, Transcendents of the Saint realm who controlled a grade two True Meaning would be able to exhibit the combat power of a Demigod with an offensive ability even greater than most.

But it was a grade two True Meaning!

The higher the grade of the True Meaning, the harder the improvement would be. Being a legendary True Meaning, its offensive ability was actually weaker than that of a grade three True Meaning by much?

Yet according to many experts, they would rather face someone who grasped hold of other grade two True Meanings than someone who grasped hold of the True Meaning of Mirage.

What was a mirage?

Reality and mirages were exact opposites!

The normal world where one lived in was considered a world of reality! As for

the other face of the world of reality... it was actually the world of illusions! In other words, the world of mirages!

The world of mirages could stand as a world by itself.

It could be said that this world was the origin of all illusion techniques! No illusion technique would ever be able to surpass it. After all, this True Meaning allowed one to control the world of mirages, and in this world, one could control everything according to his desire. Other than that... there were many other mysterious and powerful secrets behind it.

*What I've just grasped a hold of is the embryonic form of the True Meaning of Mirage, Xue Ying thought as he sighed. And yet, it is so formidable already.*

In the embryonic form stage...

He could already control illusion techniques of unfathomable prowess! Turning the heavens and changing the earth was as easy as controlling them with a thought.

"Soundlessly, it could entrap the enemy into the illusion with them being none the wiser. Afterwards, I would be able to kill them," Xue Ying mumbled. "From what I heard, experts who controlled the True Meaning of Mirage could even hide in the world of mirage... and their enemies couldn't even find their real bodies."

That's right.

Experts who grasped hold of the True Meaning of Mirage did not have a powerful offensive ability.

But even finding their true bodies would be a daunting task by itself! That year, the memoirs left behind by the Deity World regarding information on the grade two True Meaning of Mirage did not contain clear information, even though the Xia Clan ancestor himself had passed down many secrets—this True Meaning of Mirage being one of them. An expert who could control the True Meaning of Mirage could even kill an enemy without having to move his real body!

Therefore, if one could kill another without even having to move their real body, how hard would it be for the enemy to find their real body?

With the enemies being firmly lodged in the world of reality, they did not have any methods of attacking the world of mirage, and thus, they could neither find nor hurt them should they hide in that world.

*I initially wanted to perfect the embryonic form of the True Meaning of Illusions and yet, after fusing in the Profound Mystery of Earth as the crux of the True Meaning, not only did it not destroy the embryonic form, it actually took the original True Meaning one step further! This has allowed me to grasp hold of the embryonic form of the True Meaning of Mirage.* Xue Ying was shocked.

Fusion was originally an extremely difficult task.

Simply fusing the two Profound Mysteries of Water and Fire had caused many people to stumble. Fusing three Profound Mysteries was even more heaven-shattering. Thus, the difficulty of fusing four different Profound Mysteries need not be elaborated on. In addition, the Profound Mysteries of Earth itself had many different paths. Walking down one of the paths would suffice for one to become a Deity. Xue Ying chose instead to fuse the Acceptance concept behind Earth solely because he needed it most in his spear techniques.

He specifically selected aspects of the Profound Mysteries of Earth, Fire, Water and Wind to supplement his spear techniques.

As the saying goes, ‘When one tried really hard to make the flowers blossom, the flowers did not bloom. Yet when one did not mean to plant a willow, the seed thrown unexpectedly grew into a full willow tree’.

In the case of the ‘flowers blossoming,’ however, considering that cultivators chased after powerful True Meanings, if all the flowers opened in spite of that... it would be a great joke of the world! Also, was it really true that one ‘did not mean to plant a willow’ in the case where the willow grew into a full willow tree?

.....

Xue Ying understood that allowing the knowledge that he grasped hold of three different grade two embryonic forms of True Meanings would put him in great danger. The Demonic Faction, the demons, and many other experts would not stop until they exterminated him. He was only lacking a single step before grasping hold of the complete True Meaning! Right now, after grasping the embryonic form of the True Meaning of Mirage, Xue Ying could certainly survive

against rank five demons. Nonetheless, this current moment was his weakest.

In front of the many Demigods, he was still extremely weak.

Thus, he had to be patient!

Xue Ying did not tell a single soul regarding the embryonic form of True Meaning for Star and Mirage! He had to minimize the chances of leaking the information.

---

## Chapter 38 – I Can Wait

---

Evening, in the Water Rites Town.

Xue Ying and Jing Qiu were currently having dinner on the second floor of a quiet, secluded restaurant. On this floor, instead of crystal lamps, there were lanterns installed. The hazy lighting of the red, violet and blue colored lanterns created a dream-like ambience.

There were quite a few couples present.

Xue Ying and Jing Qiu had transformed their facial appearances. As long as the facial lines changed slightly, strangers would not be able to recognise them.

When they were within the Snowrock Castle, they would occasionally come to this Water Rites Town as a couple.

“It’s bustling with so much activity.” Jing Qiu supported her chin with her hand as she looked down the street. There were currently many people walking around, attracted to the many shops and restaurants. The sounds of these people and the conversations of others affected the overall atmosphere. There were even some relatively extravagant carriages surrounded by several formidable-looking guards. They clearly belonged to a rich and noble clan. Although many noblemen and wealthy merchants had already left for the province, due to the exorbitant prices of the land there, many of these noblemen and merchants could only afford to buy small pavilions for their direct descendents to live in. The many remaining members of the clan continued to live in their ancestral lands. Furthermore, a large number of employees would have to stay at their various establishments for businesses to carry on.

Thus, many small towns remained extremely crowded.

The number of demons was several times greater than that of the

Transcendents. When taking into consideration the entire Xia Clan's World, however, the number of demons was actually quite low. Under the pursuit of the Xia Clan's Transcendents, the demons would have to hide in any corner they could find. It was merely those rank five demons who brought out their Demonic Avatar out to kill.

The lives of the mortals remained relatively peaceful.

"Of course it's bustling with activity. Even though the Water Rites Town may be small, it has a population of one million people." Xue Ying laughed.

"Look over there, there are quite a lot of people on top of those boats by the river, near the end of the bridge," Jing Qiu commented. "There are actually many noble clans living in Water Rites Town."

"Being able to live an oblivious life is such an enviable matter."

Xue Ying smiled at all the things happening around him.

These mortals really lived in quite a safe environment. Many rich, noble clans continued to enjoy themselves and get drunk whereas the ordinary commoner had a hard time working to earn a living. There were also many mortals who diligently cultivated while others went on adventures, risking their lives.

All these were some of the flavours of how the mortals of the Xia Clan lived. These were what Xue Ying and the other Transcendents had to protect.

If the Transcendents were to fall...

Countless mortals would be captured and raised as animals by the demons. Large numbers of them would be grown for their souls as food for the demons. By then, every day would be a nightmare for these people living their lives like zombies.

Suddenly—

Xue Ying and Jing Qiu received messages from the Infernal Palace on their communication wristbands at the same time.

"They actually failed?" Jing Qiu had a huge change in her expression.

"Still a failure. As expected, no miracles have happened." Xue Ying shook his head. "It seems trouble has beset us."

The Infernal Palace had just sent out a message—the elite Transcendent team sent specially to invade the minor Transcendent World occupied by demons had failed in their task. All Transcendents would have to be careful.

Previously, when the Transcendents of the Xia Clan started dying one by one, everyone could guess that an unforeseen circumstance had happened. After all, they had many historical instances of demon invasions. This invasion of the minor Transcendent World by the demons had always been a conundrum faced by the Xia Clan, and it was also one of the problems that had never been solved.

“Minor Transcendent Worlds can, at most, allow Saint realm Transcendents to enter.” Jing Qiu shook her head. “From a historical viewpoint, the demons have dispatched their elites into the world. Furthermore, they’ve set up some formidable arrays that we have an extremely low chance of breaking through.”

“That’s right. The elites.” Xue Ying nodded. “Below the realm of Demigods, the demons hold too large of an advantage over us.”

According to the intelligence provided about the demons...

There were already a total of twenty-nine rank five demons investigated! The weakest amongst them could match the might of a top ten Saint ranker, and there were already three demons confirmed to be stronger than the first Saint ranker. The more important point, however, was that the current intelligence provided on the demons was not accurate. All they could do when writing the intelligence report was to estimate from the information obtained by interrogating the captured demons.

The strongest rank five demon was actually a demon called ‘Ji Er Luo.’ According to previous intelligence investigations, he had grasped hold of two different grade three True Meanings, with one of them confirmed to have reached the second stage realm!

After grasping hold of a True Meaning, one’s comprehension of it would continuously deepen...

As the comprehension of the realm became deeper, it would eventually reach the peak, and one would be able to condense a True Deity Heart.

This ‘Ji Er Luo’ was the strongest rank five demon known to date—at least



according to all those captured demons. His combat power was even greater than Chi Qiu Bai when he was a Saint!

Other than Ji Er Luo, there were others like 'Bi Ya' and 'Wu Lang' who had been confirmed of having grade three True Meanings as well.

That demon called 'Wu Lang' had grasped hold of the True Meaning of Shattered Space and was also the subordinate of General Yan Ze! Thus, Xue Ying, Chi Qiu Bai and the others had suspected... that the demon who killed Cheng Ling Shu could very well be this demon called 'Wu Lang.'

"Demons are different from us," Jing Qiu said. "From my understanding, they number in the billions of billions. From the moment they are born, they have to kill and fight for their survival, and they grow through battles. The weaker demons would have either been killed or trampled on at the lowest level."

Rank three, four and five demons normally reached the peak stage Saint realm in terms of their Demonic Energy.

That was equivalent to human Transcendents achieving the peak stage Saint realm in their Qi! But in terms of combat power, it was incomparable.

Demons were categorised based on their combat power into rank three, four and five. Those demons who could reach rank five... would already be the elites of elites amongst the many demons.

.....

After their failure, along with the formidable prowess of the demons, Xue Ying and the rest started feeling anxious. Before he grasped hold of a complete True Meaning, he could only look on with his eyes wide-open! His heart ached, but he could only endure it!

Xue Ying." Suddenly, he received a message.

"Palace Head Chen," Xue Ying replied.

"I'm sure you know of the latest news. However, you should understand... during this period of time, you have to endure even more." Palace Head Chen continued, "They have already taken control over a minor Transcendent World. This is our Xia Clan's biggest problem with almost no chance of solving! However,

our generation is quite different. We have you, who grasped hold of the embryonic form of a grade two True Meaning. Furthermore, it is the embryonic form of the strongest offensive True Meaning!

“The moment you grasp hold of the complete True Meaning, with its extreme offensive might, even though you might not be able to overcome the top ten Demigod rankers, you would not lose out to Gong Yu and the rest,” Palace Head Chen transmitted. “By then, you can definitely attack right at the forefront without having the need to enter the array. Your combat power will be unmatched, and you’ll be able to force your way in, break through the array, and completely destroy it!”

“I understand,” Xue Ying replied.

A grade two True Meaning was indeed extremely powerful.

Even still, his Qi would be too weak when compared with others like Chi Qiu Bai who, after stepping into the Demigod realm, had his body filled with the Qi of a Demigod, increasing his combat power tremendously. Furthermore, he had gotten a hold of a Deity weapon, causing his combat power to further increase. Thus, the areas of ‘Qi’ and ‘weapons’ were still relatively important.

If he were to depend solely on a grade two True Meaning, he would merely be stronger than Demigods like Gong Yu and could only match the might of some senior Demigods.

“The information of you grasping hold of the embryonic form of a grade two True Meaning is still kept a secret even today! You are the biggest ace amongst our hidden cards! That is to the point that I originally wanted to continue keeping your grade two True Meaning a secret even after you completed it. But, we’ve no choice now... they have conquered five different minor Transcendent Worlds. This is akin to having five daggers stabbed in the chest of our Xia Clan, and we need you to get rid of them! Now, you are the only one left to exterminate them!”

“Mn.” Xue Ying simply acknowledged it.

That was right.

When his combat power reached a sufficient stage, he would of course get rid

of those demons!

“The reason I contacted you this time is solely to ask you to keep enduring! I’m afraid that you might do something rash during the most crucial of times,” Palace Head Chen said. He was merely too worried that something might happen.

“Rest assured. I understand the severity of this matter,” Xue Ying replied.

“You have already grasped hold of the embryonic form of the True Meaning when you were still in the Scarlet Cloud Mountain. I estimate that you should be able to complete the True Meaning... in about ten years or so. Ten years. It’s just ten years. Compared with the war against the demons which might extend up to thousands of years, it cannot be considered much. Thus, you must wait! Within these ten years of time, the loss of our Transcendents can still be afforded,” Palace Head Chen reminded.

.....

Day by day, month by month, year by year passed by...

The war between the Transcendents of the Xia Clan and the demons continued!

During this time, the Xia Clan had set up various intelligence networks in many different areas in order to understand the current situation. As time passed, the demons were unable to withstand their thirst. There were so many humans under their eyes that they were salivating from just the sight alone. So how could they resist for such a long period of time? Thus, some of them, especially those weaker rank one and two demons, had already started to act secretly.

By borrowing power from the intelligence networks and the Transcendent patrols, the Xia Clan discovered one demon after another. Demigods were also acting in all four directions, capturing all these demons alive.

As for the human Transcendents, occasionally, they would also be spied upon by the demons. The moment they were discovered, there would be Demonic Avatars from rank five demons coming to kill them!

Even though numerically, there were more demons dying or being captured alive than Transcendents, the total number of human Transcendents was too

small, and thus, every single death made the Xia Clan feel heartache!



# Chapter 39 – That Fateful Day... Has Arrived!

---

Dragon Mountain Calendar, Year 9680, Summer.

By the side of a secluded lake, beneath a slightly tilted, thick and solid willow, a white robed teenager was sitting cross-legged, fishing. This teenager was none other than Xue Ying, who had changed his appearance while in search of demons! Naturally, he had borrowed the World Energy to observe the surrounding radius of 50 kilometers. This area contained a few villages, even a bandit group.

The willow branches were swaying in the breeze. Occasionally, ripples formed on the surface of the lake.

Suddenly—

The fishing line vibrated, and the surface of the water bubbled.

“Oh?” Xue Ying immediately pulled up his fishing rod. It flew to the shore, bringing along with it a big fish.

“Jing Qiu, I’ve caught another fish, and it’s rather big at about 1.5 kilograms.” Xue Ying chatted with Jing Qiu via the communication wristband.

“Disciple brother Xue Ying, your luck is quite good today. This should be your fifth or sixth fish already. I’m currently shopping for clothes. The store I’m in is pretty commonplace, but it actually sells clothes that they designed themselves. Although the owner is just an ordinary mage, he came up with some good designs for the clothes,” Jing Qiu replied. As the search for traces of demons had always been extremely mundane, they had to find some activities to while away their time. “Oh yes, disciple brother Xue Ying, do you not have any plans to visit

Qing Shi at the Eternal Wind Academy? He actually broke through to the Legend rank. As his elder brother, you should at least go and congratulate him!”

“Is breaking through to the Legend rank that big of a matter?” Xue Ying retorted.

Even though he replied that way, he still felt extremely elated on the inside.

Having watched his little brother grow up, they were mutually fond of each other. In his heart, his feelings for his brother were extremely deep.

“I can’t praise this brat too much. Right now, he finally broke through to the Legend rank and is sure to be extremely proud of himself. If I rushed back to see him now, he might not even know who he is by the end!” Xue Ying said. “Let him cool down for a moment and realise how things actually are, so that he won’t get too full of himself.”

“You shouldn’t look down on your little brother. Having been able to step into the Legend rank, he should have attained quite a high level of refinement in his spirit. Otherwise, he wouldn’t be able to attain the stage of One with the World.”

After chatting for a while, their conversation gradually died down.

Xue Ying continued fishing. As he fished, he could feel his own thoughts turning towards his comprehension of Profound Mysteries and spear techniques.

These few years...

His Qi had already reached the peak stage Saint realm, and his body had also reached the early stage of the Saint realm. These tasks were quite simple, however, since he only needed to spend some time consuming Origin Stones in order to attain the required energy.

Whether it was the countless mortals or the Transcendents... they continued living their daily lives as usual. Of course, there had been many injuries and deaths happening as of late. Each time the demons returned to their wanton slaughter, there were large numbers of mortals dying. This was unremarkable for the Xia Clan as a whole, but whenever Xue Ying and the others chased after the demons, they would realise that the demons had long since fled, leaving behind

a scene of misery.

Hong!

While fishing under the willow and pondering the refinement of his spear techniques, Xue Ying suddenly had a realisation. In his mind, all the different thoughts were pointing towards a single conclusion.

An enlightenment!

This feeling was incredible. Xue Ying examined his surroundings. The sky and the ground remained the same. The surface of the lake was still just the surface of the lake. All the distant trees, the mountains and wild birds felt the same as before.

But... somehow, they felt different as well.

The landscape did not change! The world did not change!

Yet in reality, a transformation had occurred.

Xue Ying was able to see the essence behind the reality, the fundamental rules that governed the world behind the scenes. When he saw that behind the Myriad Existences of the world were countless Laws of Profound Mysteries revolving, he was only able to perceive a very small part of the entire picture. This small part, however, was extremely close to the true essence of the Profound Mysteries! With it, he felt as if he had become the 'ruler' of this world!

When learning a new craft, an ordinary person might not understand any of it, thinking the craft extremely complex. Only when the craft was truly mastered would one be able to easily see through the true essence underlying it.

The same logic applied in this sense as well.

Once he fully grasped hold of a True Meaning, Xue Ying would be akin to having a sharp blade—a blade that could pry open the entire revolving Laws of the World! The closer this blade was to the essence, the more terrifying and dangerous its potential in causing destruction to the Laws. This time, while fishing, Xue Ying had grasped hold of an extremely terrifying sharp blade.

Anything within this area of 50 kilometers around me is within my attacking range. Xue Ying felt drunk on this feeling.

Let's test it out. With a movement of his hand, a distant falling leaf immediately flew onto Xue Ying's palm.

Clasping the leaf between his fingers, he threw it!

Xiu!

The nature of a fallen leaf would not contain any sort of Qi, but its surface contained a layer of essence! This sort of mystical power was unpredictable and appeared due to the Laws of Profound Mysteries! For him to reach the level of manipulating this essence represented the comprehension of a True Meaning! The formation by the Laws of Profound Mysteries!

The leaf immediately penetrated through space, containing within it a power that seemed to be able to tear through every obstacle in its way.

Following that, in a location about fifty kilometers away.

A fragment of the leaf appeared out of nowhere at the peak of a mountain. It immediately tore through a large mountain rock 3.3 meters in height. The moment the leaf touched that rock, the layer of True Meaning encapsulating the leaf immediately punctured the mountain rock. Soundlessly... the rock was pierced through. This was not piercing in the material sense. Instead, it had pierced through the Laws of Profound Mysteries!

It was an even deeper layer of particles beyond atoms and molecules that had been pierced through! In other words, the most fundamental particles had been cleaved! The deepest layer had been destroyed!

"Disperse!" Xue Ying immediately sent a thought.

The leaf containing True Meaning immediately lost its power. Having already penetrated through the big rock, the leaf floated down slowly in midair.

As for the large mountain rock, it had a finger-width hole in it, yet no dust from the rock could be seen.

If I hadn't taken the initiative to disperse the True Meaning covering it, I'm afraid this fragment of the leaf would have continued piercing through for more than 500 kilometers, Xue Ying thought. Unknowingly, I have finally reached the level of that expert who had left behind battle scars within the cavern palace of



the Black-Wind Abyss.

A single move from that expert had destroyed the immense pillars supporting the cavern palace, tearing through its way for more than fifty kilometers.

Even more, Xue Ying's attack was converged onto a single point!

Even though the two moves had their pros and cons, they were both on the same standing in terms of power.

The strength of a Demigod?

Xue Ying was startled.

Even when using any single Law of Profound Mystery in attacks, the might of a True Meaning had great power! Xue Ying's fully completed True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, however, currently had a power so great that with a single smash outwards with his fist, he could annihilate a city of 50 kilometers in radius or disintegrate mountain.

The Laws of Profound Mysteries by themselves could control the World Energy!

Of course, this was the most simple type of power.

Only when one's strength matched the Laws of Profound Mysteries could it be called terrifying! A muscular man blindly smashing his fist at someone would only do so much damage. If that muscular man was instead matched up with a sharp blade, his combat power would be greatly increased due to his strength being matched up with the sharpness of the blade.

One's innate power would be akin to having strength! What was contained by the True Meaning—the Laws of Profound Mysteries—was the sharp blade!

That was why... everyone aimed to attain a True Meaning of an even higher grade!

"Palace Head Chen." Xue Ying remained seated with the fishing rod at his side.

"Xue Ying?" Palace Head Chen was currently in his study room within the Xia Capital's Infernal Palace. It had long been filled by the large volume of scrolls. Even though he remained within the Infernal Palace, he was actually the one arranging and dispatching all the Transcendents of the Xia Clan! Even the Dragon

Mountain Manor's intelligence network that covered the entire world was under his lead. For him to be able to assume this position meant that he had an unquestionable loyalty and had long sworn his soul to his clan.

Currently, the message sent by Xue Ying sent shivers through his heart.

That was because... Xue Ying would rarely take the initiative to contact him. Furthermore, it hadn't been too long since their last meeting.

"Palace Head Chen, I've finally grasped hold of the complete True Meaning!" Xue Ying transmitted.

---

# Chapter 40 – I Need a Half Year's Time

---

*Hu!* Palace Head Chen suddenly stood up in front of the desk. He was so excited, he was unable to control his whole body's aura. The atmosphere in the library was stirred up.

"You comprehended it?" Palace Head Chen was incomparably excited. Throughout his entire life, he had never been so excited, not even when he became a Transcendent. "A complete True Meaning of Extreme Piercing? Ha ha ha, in the Xia Clan's history, only one other person has been able to comprehend a grade two True Meaning. I never thought that in my generation, during a demon invasion, another exceptional Transcendent who is able to comprehend a grade two True Meaning would appear! Ha ha ha, it's a divine intervention for our Xia Clan, divine intervention!"

"It took several more years than what I initially predicted," transmitted Xue Ying.

Every year, with every Xia Clan's Transcendent that fell, Xue Ying became more anxious, but there was nothing he could do! With the current realm of spirit Xue Ying was at, he could throw his anxieties to the back of his mind and fish without a care in the world. He knew clearly that his anxious state would hinder rather than help his cultivation. Only in an absolutely peaceful state would he progress quickly, allowing him to fully immerse himself in his spearmanship.

"Ha ha, spending several more years to comprehend it means nothing! A grade two True Meaning! Previously, you had only comprehended its embryonic form, generally ensuring you would one day grasp the complete True Meaning. Still, I couldn't fully rest easy, afraid you would encounter a setback. Ha ha, now that you've made a breakthrough, I can finally be at ease." Palace Head Chen continued, "There's salvation after all for our Xia Clan's Transcendents below the

Demigod level!”

As long as they were able to pluck those rank five demons from their lair in the Minor Transcendent World, even if the Demon Generals still concealed themselves in the mortal worlds, their threat would be greatly reduced! The Demonic Avatars of those unrestrained rank five demons were truly a nuisance, after all. Even when annihilated, they only needed two to three years to rest and restore their damaged souls before leaving to attack again.

“Oh, how is the might of your True Meaning of Extreme Piercing?” asked Palace Head Chen. “Is it able to cut open the demon lair’s array?”

“This is an extremely offensive True Meaning. How could the attack be weak,” said Xue Ying. “Its might is comparable to a senior Demigod’s.”

Demigod attack power.

He had compared his current strength with the descriptions of demigod attack power in the files he had read through and determined that his attack power was roughly equal now.

“Good, very good! With this kind of strength, even a frontal attack is sufficient to break the array! By the way, are you sure you can resist the demons’ attacks? Those rank five demons are no joke. Based on our investigation so far, the most powerful one, Ji Er Luo, is more powerful than Eternal Wind when he was still a Saint Transcendent!” Palace Head Chen became worried. “And there are other rank five demons that have comprehended their own True Meanings.”

“Rest assured, Palace Head Chen. You should know that my True Meaning of Extreme Piercing can make long distance attacks. I need not be near them,” replied Xue Ying. He continued, “Moreover, I’m also able to penetrate through space and other obstructions. They can’t block me if I wish to escape.”

When he had comprehended only the embryonic form, Xue Ying was able to penetrate through space when engaged in combat. The complete True Meaning was definitely more heaven-defying. Even if the space was blocked or sealed, he would be able to pierce through it! Instead of being limited to the rules of space-type True Meanings, his True Meaning of Extreme Piercing could theoretically pierce through time, space, and other types of boundaries or limitations!

“This is good.” Palace Head Chen relaxed. “I’m being too anxious.”

This war already involved the lives of more than half of the Xia Clan’s Transcendents! Now, it also implicated Xue Ying, who had comprehended a grade two True Meaning! Palace Head Chen couldn’t help but to feel nervous.

“Don’t worry, I’ll be careful,” said Xue Ying with confidence.

“Oh, when will you be ready to attack the Minor Transcendent World where those demons are based?” asked Palace Head Chen.

“Give me another half year’s time,” replied Xue Ying. “I need that time to make preparations.”

“Ha ha, okay. It’s already been nearly twenty years since the arrival of the demons. What difference does half a year make?” said Palace Head Chen.

“Moreover, you just recently grasped the True Meaning, so you need to familiarize yourself with it and consolidate your foundation! Take your time to prepare. Just inform me whenever you’re ready. I will ask three Demigods, Faction Head Si Kong, Eternal Wind and Mountain Lord He, to help you.”

“Okay.” Xue Ying nodded.

They ended their communication.

Xue Ying took a deep breath then looked at the mirror-like lake surface. *Half a year is not a long time.*

The main reason he asked for six months was not only to consolidate his comprehension, but to comprehend the other grade two True Meanings!

Extreme Piercing was the one he had cultivated the longest and also the first one he had comprehended.

As for the True Meaning of Star, its cultivation was going smoothly. He estimated that in order to completely grasp the True Meaning, he needed 35 days at the least and one or two months at most.

The True Meaning of Mirage, however, Xue Ying was uncertain of. At the earliest, he would only need several months to comprehend it, but at the latest, it would take several years.

It should be known...

Every year, the Xia Clan's Transcendents died one after another! Since the beginning of the demon invasion, more than two-tenths of the Xia Clan's Transcendents have fallen! At first, the Transcendents who died were inexperienced with war, careless and easily caught. As time went on, the ones who survived became more cautious, gradually reducing the death rate.

Yet if this continued for a thousand years, eight-tenths of the Xia Clan's Transcendents would be lost!

*I definitely need to completely comprehend True Meaning of Star in this half year's time, thought Xue Ying. These two grade two True Meanings, the True Meaning of Star and the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, I have 100% certainty of comprehending. As for the True Meaning of Mirage, it depends on my luck. It doesn't matter if I need several years to comprehend it. My Xia Clan can't wait several more years for me to practice.*

.....

Xue Ying sat beside the lake, fishing. Suddenly, his expression changed.

*Shua.*

His body penetrated through space and appeared at a remote village situated more than 25 kilometers from the lake.

"Ha ha ha, really pleasurable. I never felt this good in the Abyss. Wow, this Material World human spirit is really delicious. Boo hoo, in the Abyss, only Demonic Gods have the privilege to taste it. Ha ha, this Xia Clan's world is so huge, while the number of Transcendents is so small. My probability of being found while hunting is low. Go hunting and then immediately escape. Ze ze, too cool, too cool!" said a small, ugly man. The man's hand changed into thick demon talons. His body also emitted a violent, demonic aura.

Judging from the demonic energy he emitted, he was merely a rank one or two lesser demon.

*Pu.*

Xue Ying's palm cut through the void and smacked down. His whole body was protected by a layer of True Meaning. One needed to be alert when facing a demon. Who knew if another powerful demon lurked in the dark? The True

Meaning of Extreme Piercing covered his palm as he swung it onto the puny demon's head. *Pu*. Without a sound, the puny demon's body completely disintegrated.

The True Meaning's might instantly shattered the puny demon's body into particles, completely dissipating it until it was unable to be seen any longer by the naked eye.

The weapon and treasures on the demon's body were also completely crushed under the True Meaning's might. Only some that were made from extraordinarily hard materials were left behind.

*Peng*. The demon's storage treasure trembled and then shattered open, its contents also fractured into pieces. Xue Ying looked at what seemed like a bubble and a crystal ball that had also broken apart. The crystal ball contained numerous, shrieking human souls.

With the crystal ball broken, those human souls regained its freedom and disappeared into the world.

"Damned demon!" A cold glint flashed through Xue Ying's eyes. The crystal ball contained human souls that had been hunted by the lesser demon. They were collected to be handed to Demon Generals, rank five demons, and other high rank demons! Like those five demons who nestled in Minor Transcendent Worlds, their bodies were similarly unable to go out and hunt human souls, so instead they assigned some lesser demons to hunt for them.

*But what the puny demon said is true.* Xue Ying looked at the village that had turned into a ghost town. *My Xia Clan has too few Transcendents, and the probability of finding demons while they're out hunting is too low. The mortals can only wait for their demise.*

Xue Ying was filled with wrath.

According to history, with the passage of time, the number of the Xia Clan's Transcendents could only become fewer and fewer. The area able to be guarded by the Xia Clan would shrink while the demons would become more unrestrained. Of course, those who stood on the river bank couldn't always have dry shoes. As long as the demons were found when hunting, their death was a certain thing. This cruel process, however, would need to last for a thousand

years.

“Six months.”

“Another six months.” Xue Ying immediately transmitted his coordinates to the Infernal Palace. “I found a demon here and already eliminated it.”

He believed that in a moment, people from the Dragon Mountain Manor would come to clear the area.

Xue Ying turned and left.

---



# Chapter 41 – A Bitter Encounter

---

Two months after Xue Ying grasped hold of the complete True Meaning of Extreme Piercing.

A group of people from a large clan was currently travelling on the official road. In one of the spacious carriages, a pallid and fat man was reclining with four beautiful maidservants by his side. A pair were massaging his head and shoulders, another was massaging his thigh, and the last was feeding him fruits... this big fatty clearly knew how to enjoy life.

*Such a comfortable life. Even if I do not eat these delicious human souls, just living here in the mortal world is much more enjoyable than living in that Dark Abyss!* The big fatty thought. *My luck is so good. Danger after danger, I came into this world through that spatial passageway before it disappeared. I'm lucky enough not to have been killed by that terrifying female Demigod of the Xia Clan.*

When he entered this world, the Xia Clan Transcendent City Lady Bu was wielding her Deity weapon, sweeping through all the demons that came in. Large amounts of demonic ashes blew through the air. He was quite lucky to survive.

*Dong dong dong.* Suddenly, there was a knock on the door followed by a voice. "Master!"

"Enter," the big fatty replied.

*Hua!* The carriage door was pulled wide open, and a gold-robed teenager entered the carriage. He sat down carefully.

The big fatty glanced at him. "What's the matter?"

"Master, it seems that there's a minor issue." The gold-robed teenager chose

his words carefully. It was clear to him that this big fatty came from a sizeable organisation and had a high status. Even his own clan's patriarch had to be polite with him, so he would certainly not dare to act arrogantly in front of him. Furthermore, this big fatty's combat power was so high that he could not gauge its level.

"What issue cropped up that you have to come and bother me?" The big fatty frowned. Being a demon from the Dark Abyss, he naturally loved to enjoy himself and did not like any troublesome matters.

"We have caught up with that female slave who ran away. However, she actually came under the protection of an expert—a Silver Moon Knight—and he even killed two of our men. They are all being cautious now," the gold-robed teenager softly reported. "That Silver Moon Knight will certainly kill a large number of our people if we let the entire team surround and kill him. Master, what should we do now?"

"Where is the female slave?" The big fatty frowned.

"She's located ahead by about five kilometers," the gold-robed teenager replied. "A team of our men is currently following them."

"Hmph, a group of rubbish. Follow them closely. I'll deal with this," the big fatty declared.

"Yes." The gold-robed teenager was elated. He immediately urged his team on, "Quick, quick, quick!"

The team rushed ahead with a relatively fast speed.

The big fatty sneered before reassuming his comfortable lying position. He did not hold the mortal experts in his eyes. Despite his human appearance, he did not dare to use any Demonic Energy! Still, with just his physical strength, he would be able to kill a Legend ranker quite easily! But if there was no point in doing that, he would not act.

*As a demon, bullying these mortals has no meaning at all. But there's no choice. I need to hide my Demonic Energy,* the big fatty thought to himself. If he didn't need to hide his power, he'd be able to fully release his potential and even slaughter a million mortals. The most painful fact was that that he did not dare

use his Demonic Energy, so all his secret techniques could not be displayed. He could not eat any human souls either. At the most, he could only use his fundamental physical prowess like strength and speed. He could not even display the grade seven True Meaning he grasped hold of! The moment his True Meaning was discovered, he would certainly be suspected of being a demon!

*Hong long long!*

The horses galloped onwards on the plains. The extravagant clan's group traveled five kilometers within the blink of an eye.

"Surround him!" Atop his horse, the gold-robed teenager furiously pointed ahead.

*Lu lu lu~* Immediately, the team of cavalry surrounded them. The mages behind the cavalry were well-prepared to cast their spells at any time.

By the side of the official road.

Two people astride a Snowstrider Horse were surrounded.

The two travelers were a beautiful, young lady and a teenager carrying a sword on his back. The young lady was extremely nervous as she looked at the large number of cavalry surrounding them. These knights were all of the Heaven and Meteor ranks, making the young lady uneasy. Her delicate body could not help but shiver. She looked at the teenager by her side.

"Don't be so nervous. Just be at ease and eat something. You've not eaten for days." The teenager calmed her down with a smile.

"But uncle, they're all here already and have surrounded us!" The young lady gritted her teeth. "If there's no choice, then uncle, you should just leave me. Run for your life."

"This knight."

That gold-robed teenager shouted out, "That female slave's family has committed a grievous crime. She has been demoted to being a slave. Today, she is actually a slave of our Gui Clan. You better not meddle in our affairs, or else we will report to the higher-ups that you stole our female slave. That's violating the laws of the Empire. By then, if the Dragon Mountain Manor captures you, you

will stay in prison for a few years.”

“So now that you, the young master of the Gui Clan, failed in chasing after her, you decided to turn falsehood into truth, destroy her entire family and even make her a female slave?” The teenager’s eyes were cold. “Your methods are quite cruel!”

“Hmph.” The gold-robed teenager snorted before coming down from his horse. He went to the side of the carriage and respectfully said, “Master.”

“Mn.”

A cold snort was heard.

A big fatty came out of the carriage. His eyes were full of killing intent as he looked at the teenager. “You dare to go against our Gui Clan... so arrogant! Since you seek death, I’ll certainly grant you your wish!” After saying that, all the mages started chanting their spells.

“Uncle,” the young lady hurriedly said. “Uncle, you should quickly leave this place. I don’t want you to be killed by them.”

The teenager was none other than Xue Ying. He smiled. “Don’t be afraid. They can’t kill me.” These days, he had been engrossed in cultivation. On the ninth day after grasping hold of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, he had successfully completed controlling the True Meaning of Star! He achieved this sooner than he had predicted. Now, Xue Ying was focusing on completing the True Meaning of Mirage and was always deeply pondering on it.

“Kill!” Big fatty shouted as he pointed at Xue Ying.

*Hong~*

Those spells prepared by the mages shot out almost simultaneously. The strongest mage amongst them was just a Meteor rank Mage. This group of nine mages displayed a fusion spell! It was a spell that could reach grade five and could even injure Silver Moon Knights.

*Hu hu hu ~*

Under the joint forces of the nine mages, gusts of wind appeared around Xue Ying and that young lady. This spell was known as Destructive Wind Hurricane! It

would form into a hurricane filled with countless black-coloured wind blades. Its prowess was extraordinary! Even a Silver Moon Knight with his Qi protecting his body would be hard-pressed to survive against it. The typical response to this spell was to escape its area of effect.

“Hmph.” Xue Ying snorted. He instantly used World Energy to destroy this spell. The gusts of wind that appeared dissipated into nothingness!

“This, this is...”

“The spell did not complete!”

“That’s One with the World!”

All the knights and mages were startled.

The big fatty had a huge change in expression. That gold-robed teenager’s face became even paler.

“This great sir.” The big fatty hurriedly bowed down. However, due to his stomach being too big, he had great trouble even bending down. He was so frightened that his entire forehead was full of sweat. “It is I who offended this great sir. However you wish to punish me or any compensation you require, great sir, please just say.”

At the same time, he reported upwards through his communication wristband —

“Discovered someone that appears to be a Transcendent!” The big fatty immediately transmitted the message with the accurate position of their location and Xue Ying’s current appearance.

*Another possible Transcendent has been discovered by me. Hei hei, even if it’s merely a Legend ranker, it would still represent a huge contribution.* The big fatty was full of excitement in his heart. *Foolish human. I’ll let you revel in it for a moment. In a breath of time... a rank five demon’s Demonic Avatar will be here.*

He disguised himself as a human extremely prudently.

All these mages were arranged by him. Through the Destructive Wind Hurricane spell, he could clearly determine his enemy’s true combat power! That was because the countless black-colored wind blades were difficult to defend

against, even for a Legend ranker. Therefore, if he defended himself easily against the spell while depending on the World Energy, then that person must be a Transcendent.

The dependance on World Energy also meant that he was at least a Legend ranker! One must know that even Legend rankers were hiding their strength, borrowing World Energy to search for traces of demons. Although their area of observation was smaller, they would still discover demons sometimes.

“Mn?” Xue Ying did not hold these people in his eyes. Suddenly, he frowned as he turned towards the distant void.

With his True Meaning of Star and his control over the Laws of Profound Mysteries of the World...

He could easily discover that there was a terrifying force nearing him in that distant void! And that power did not feel like the Saint realm, but instead, the Demigod realm!

---

# Chapter 42 – Clan Protection Treasure?

---

Inside the passageway, within the tear in space.

The thin, small-sized demon covered in purple scales was currently penetrating through space with great speed. He was none other than the highest commander amongst the demons of the five northern provinces — Demon General Yan Ze!

General Yan Ze had been wanting to kill Xue Ying ever since Demonic God Wu Yun Huo determined him to be a huge threat. However... whenever Xue Ying was not hiding his identity, he would be in the Snowrock Castle that had long since been covered with arrays that could resist his attacks for quite a while. And if he changed his appearance and hid his aura, Xue Ying would not be so easy to find!

These ten years.

They had met two cases similar to that of Xue Ying's. Both times, he sent out his Demonic Avatar! One must know that every time he moved, it was an action wrought with potential danger, and that was because he was in the mortal world! Using his Demonic Avatar would easily reveal himself.

But he felt... this was worth it!

Every time his Demonic Avatar was sent out, he would tunnel with his battleship! After the battle, his Demonic Avatar would then return to the middle layer of the void in between space, travel for half an hour in a random direction... anything as long as he could reduce the amount of danger.

*The demons under me and those of the Demonic Faction have undertaken many investigations of Dong Bo Xue Ying's personality. Furthermore, three of the Transcendents of the Tranquil Sun Province have already died. Thus, only a few Transcendents currently remain, General Yan Ze thought. According to our*

*investigations and by process of elimination, there is at least a 30% chance that this is Dong Bo Xue Ying! This person, who is even more of a genius than Chi Qiu Bai, must be eliminated while he is still weak and young!*

*Hong—*

Tunneling through the passageway in space, he flew with his full strength. Due to the large distance, he was forced to tunnel for a breath's worth of time to reach the location.

*I hope that this time, it's Dong Bo Xue Ying! The previous two times were wrong. Each time will have about a 30% to 40% chance of being the right one.. Thus, I believe that the third time will not be wrong! As long as I succeed, that calamity will be eliminated,* General Yan Ze thought. The five Demon Generals had differing personalities. Of the group, he was the most calm and calculated.

\*\*\*\*\*

By the official road.

The Gui Clan's knights and mages were rapidly retreating. They did not dare to surround them any longer. As nobody dared to offend a Legend ranking expert, they were all respectful. That big fatty and gold-robed teenager were also respectfully flattering them.

"Uncle, are you actually a Legend Knight?" The young woman was excited. Her tears were about to flow down from her eyes as she finally saw hope in getting her revenge. "Uncle, my parents and my little sister died from injustice, I..."

"A moment." Xue Ying raised his hands and frowned.

That young woman was startled. She suddenly realized that... she might be 'asking for a foot when she got an inch?' This Legend ranking uncle had saved her, and now, she wanted him to help her even more?

*Such a powerful aura.*

*A Demigod?*

Xue Ying frowned. He turned towards the distant void.

The True Meaning of Star's Gravity Domain had a huge influence on space. With his body as the nucleus, anything in a radius of 50 kilometers was his



Gravity Domain's area of influence! And this terrifying Gravity Domain... had such an extremely formidable might that even space itself was affected. In the future, when his comprehension of the Realms deepened, the powerful gravity could even affect the flow of time, thus any small motion in space itself would be known by Xue Ying.

*There's a Demigod existence currently tunnelling through space towards this location?* Xue Ying thought.

The moment he finished thinking this...

*Si la—*

In the distant void, an unseen power instantly tore through space, revealing an ugly crack. At the same time, a thin, small demon covered in purple scales who emitted a terrifying aura walked out!

*One of the five Demon Generals, General Yan Ze?* Xue Ying's expression changed slightly. He immediately reported to the Infernal Palace, "General Yan Ze has appeared. It should be his Demonic Avatar at my location."

"Xue Ying, the information has been reported to Eternal Wind, Chao Qing and Si Kong Yang. They will immediately rush over to your location!" Palace Head Chen immediately replied.

"What is that!"

"Heavens!"

"Demon!"

The bypassers on the official road, the knights and mages, the weak and small young girl, and that big fatty all had terrified expressions. That big fatty was indeed wrought by extreme terror. He had not thought that the Demonic Avatar to arrive would not belong to a rank five Demon but instead to the high and mighty General Yan Ze!

General Yan Ze's Demonic Avatar appeared, without hiding his his mighty Demonic Energy at all. His great strength caused the surrounding space to tremble and signs of scars to appear. He looked downwards at Xue Ying's figure.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying?" General Yan Ze's voice was great and mighty. "Die!"

*Mn?* Xue Ying was startled.

He was discovered?

How did he get discovered? He had hidden himself quite well though.

What he did not know was that General Yan Ze only had a certainty of 30% to 40%. If it were for any other Transcendent, General Yan Ze would not be willing to take the risk. But against Xue Ying, General Yan Ze felt that it was worth the danger!

*Hong!* Xue Ying immediately shot up to the sky as quick as lightning. He did not want to turn those mortals into collateral damage.

“Do you think you can escape?” General Yan Ze immediately teleported, appearing beside Xue Ying.

“Xue Ying, you don’t have to do anything. Leave this to me.” A voice suddenly resounded in Xue Ying’s ears.

“This—”

Xue Ying was shocked.

He was of course not afraid of this General Yan Ze. He could survive easily with his True Meaning of Star or True Meaning of Extreme Piercing. Even if he were to hide his own combat power, by borrowing the Gravity Domain radius of control on the surrounding 50 kilometers of space, he could easily teleport away. Along with his deepening comprehension of the Realms, his combat power similarly increased. Thus, even if he did not study the Profound Mystery of Space, he could teleport and tear through space.

Demigods, for example, could all teleport and tear through space!

Deities could even control time to a certain extent even if they did not study time itself, as long as their comprehension of the Realms reached a certain extent.

Xue Ying’s Extreme Piercing could be considered too overbearing.

But the True Meaning of Star was an extremely balanced True Meaning. He had control over the surrounding space using the Gravity Domain, allowing Xue Ying to have a greater control of space than many Demigods! Even during

battles, he could teleport, unless the space had been sealed. In such a moment, however, he could indeed still forcibly penetrate through space with his Extreme Piercing.

For Xue Ying, ordinary teleportation was too simple! However, General Yan Ze would think of Xue Ying as being too slippery, and would operate with those rank five demons who could seal off space the next time.

.....

As of now, however, Xue Ying didn't need to reveal his combat power in order to escape.

He had a helper!

Si— General Yan Ze's demonic claws turned into a stream of particles that directly attacked Xue Ying.

"Demon! Such audacious behaviour!"

A resounding voice shouted!

The green-gray coloured wristband on Xue Ying's hand surged into a stream of endless green and gray, covering and trapping General Yan Ze!

*Clan Protection Treasure?* Xue Ying was startled. That green-gray coloured wristband of his was indeed one of the two protection treasures given to him by Palace Head Chen. The other was a piece refined by the Purple Thunder Emperor. This ordinary-looking, murky green wristband had been called a Clan Protection Treasure by Palace Head Chen.

A Deity warrior? General Yan Ze's Demonic Avatar cried out in alarm. Deep in his heart, he was cursing. *A Transcendent actually has the protection of Xia Clan's Deity warrior? Even Demigods wouldn't carry any Deity warriors on them! It seems that this Dong Bo Xue Ying is indeed Xia Clan's utmost talent. The Xia Clan has looked upon him greatly, and even allowed him to bring a Deity warrior with him at all times. It seems trouble has arrived. This Demonic Avatar of mine isn't my true body after all! It doesn't have any physical strength, and furthermore, its Demonic Energy is rapidly being consumed.*

One could only see a stream of green and gray shrouding the Demonic Avatar,

turning into a big green-grayed sphere of about 100 meters in radius.

General Yan Ze struggled.

His moves and techniques had a power that could crumble the world.

Yet every time he tried to penetrate the stream of green and gray with his claws, the stream of green and gray would once again cover him.

*Hou!*

A furious snarl left his mouth.

Turning into a stream of purple-coloured particles, he penetrated through the stream of green and gray, tunnelling into space itself and into the middle layer of the void. Despite his efforts, the stream followed after him into the middle layer of the void.

*Deity warrior?* Xue Ying stared in shock.

“Palace Head Chen, the Clan Protection Treasure that you gave me is in fact, a Deity warrior?” Xue Ying transmitted over. He had always thought that it was merely some unique protection treasure.

“Haha, I did not tell you previously because I was worried that you would become arrogant and relax in your cultivation,” Palace Head Chen replied. “Furthermore, how could an ordinary treasure forewarn you of the danger in the surroundings? All Deity warriors are extremely powerful, sentient warriors with intelligence. They are also extremely loyal and would be able to sense any dangers in the surrounding area. That’s precisely why it could provide you with well-rounded protection! Also, I did not name it wrongly since we only have very few Deity warriors with us. All of them could be said to be Clan Protection Treasures.”

Xue Ying was speechless.

Alright.

No wonder Palace Head Chen was so relaxed. Indeed, he had left a Deity warrior by his side. This Deity warrior came from the Deity World and was extremely mystical. Like the one he fought during the Transcendent Battle of Life and Death... it was actually in the form of a water droplet! Just an ordinary

looking water droplet. If nobody pointed it out, the Xia Clan Demigods would not even consider it as anything exceptional.

And the one currently protecting him was a similar case— an ordinary looking wristband.

*Hong long long~* In the middle layer of the void, Chi Qiu Bai and Chao Qing had arrived, and they were jointly attacking the Demonic Avatar of General Yan Ze, who was under attack from the Deity warrior.

---

## Chapter 43 – Flicking His Fingers

---

On the official road, all the passers-by, the knights and mages were dazed by the spectacle which completely transcended their imaginations!

As for the big fatty who was situated amongst the people, he was indeed truly terrified and panicking. *I'm dead; I'm so dead. General Yan Ze's Demonic Avatar actually met a Deity warrior! I had heard that the Xia Clan owned several Deity warriors... but the number of Deity warriors was always so low. How could it appear here?*

*The Xia Clan must suspect that there should be a demon hiding amongst us. Right now, they have surrounded the General and are jointly attacking him. I'm afraid they would next filter all the mortals within the scene one by one!* The big fatty was feeling extremely anxious.

Under ordinary circumstances...

When the demon hiding among mortals discovered a possible Transcendent and reported to the top, the rank five demon's Demonic Avatar would assassinate the human Transcendent instantly! And with the assassination taking place, the covert demon could make use of that opportunity to escape and hide in places where large groups of humans gathered.

*This Dong Bo Xue Ying is currently right there, and he must be borrowing World Energy to investigate the surroundings. The moment I try to escape, he will immediately discover me.* The big fatty was really very nervous. *But if I don't take the chance, once the Demigods arrive, the approximate hundred people situated on this official road will be easily filtered through, and by then, my identity will be leaked!*

One could forcibly use Transcendent Qi to permeate through the inner body of

a mortal to check if he was a demon! Without care, however, the Transcendent Qi used could be too powerful and they might easily shatter the mortal himself!

But it would be fine as long as one was careful enough.

Within any city, finding a demon hiding amongst the population of more than a million people was extremely difficult. But currently, in this location, there were only an approximate of a hundred people. Half an hour would suffice in checking the body of everyone here!

*If I don't escape, I'll die. If I escape... I'll still have some glimmer of hope. This Dong Bo Xue Ying is merely at the Saint realm! He probably won't be able to chase after me!* The big fatty's heart was in turmoil, though he gritted his teeth before making his decision. *If the Demigods arrive, I'll have absolutely no chance of survival. Run!*

*Hong!*

The big fatty, who was originally situated amongst the knights and mages, suddenly turned into a stream of light that shot up into the sky. His speed was so fast that it shocked the surrounding people—it was even faster than the speed Xue Ying previously used in his escape! Of course, Xue Ying had deliberately hidden his actual combat power earlier. If he displayed his true power, his speed would be extremely terrifying and might cause suspicion in General Yan Ze. Right now, since this big fatty was trying his utmost in escaping, his Demonic Energy had been fully released.

“Ah!” Those knights and mages were all startled. The golden-robed teenager of the Gui Clan was even more astonished.

Flying in the sky?

Who was he? A Transcendent? Or a demon?

“Escape?” Situated in mid-air, Xue Ying, who was still pondering over General Yan Ze, immediately turned toward the quickly escaping stream of light which had already traveled into the horizon. Clearly, he was trying to escape from Xue Ying's area of observation. By then, he would be able to randomly find a village and transform into another person while hiding his aura. With the Xia Clan's size, it would be akin to finding a needle in a haystack. How could one find him by

then?

Xue Ying flicked his finger.

*Xiu.*

A strand of Transcendent Qi infused with the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing immediately penetrated through space. Following that, it appeared at the location of that stream of light. As the big fatty was currently trying his utmost to escape, he had turned his body into particles.

*Si la*— The Transcendent Qi infused with the might of a True Meaning clashed with the stream of light. Under the influence of the Laws of Profound Mysteries of the True Meaning, that stream of light immediately started crumbling apart. His body's most fundamental particles began to shatter, before the weapons and treasures on his body followed suit. Even the storage treasure shattered into pieces. Everything not up to the required standard would not survive under the power of the Laws of a True Meaning.

*Ah!* Feeling his body crumbling apart, the big fatty tried his utmost to put his body back together. His demonic face was full of malevolence and regret. *Dong Bo Xue Ying, he...*

*Hu.*

His body immediately disappeared from the sky, with only very few treasures of unique composition falling from his position.

Mortals had a limited range of sight. That demon had already traveled more than five kilometers away, and his speed was so fast that the mortals could not see clearly. Even those falling treasures could not be seen clearly by the mortals.

*So weak,* Xue Ying thought. *I don't know if he was a rank three or four demon.*

There was no difference between a rank three and a rank four demon before him. They would both be slaughtered.

Rank five demons might possibly struggle for a moment.

Only Demigods could truly battle against him. If a rank five demon wished to fight him, only the strongest might be able to exchange a move or two with him. For instance, that rank five demon Ji Er Luo was stronger than the previous Chi



Qiu Bai when he was a Saint. He had grasped hold of two different grade three True Meanings, with one of them attaining the stage two Realm. Xue Ying would have to be wary of him.

After a few breaths of time passed.

*Si la~*

Suddenly, a black crack in space appeared in the sky above him. Three figures flew out from it—they were none other than Chi Qiu Bai, Chao Qin and Si Kong Yang. Their combat powers were currently in the top ten of the Demigod rankings! Of course, Chi Qiu Bai had become a Demigod only recently, coinciding with the war with the demons. Therefore, in order to hide information from their enemies, the Xia Clan temporarily held off on adding him to the rankings.

In reality, after Chi Qiu Bai gained control of a Deity weapon, he had truly attained the combat power comparable to those in the Demigod ranking list! Once his True Meaning of Void Cleavage attained the stage three Realm, he would certainly become first or second in the rankings!

“Xue Ying.” Chi Qiu Bai, Chao Qing and Si Kong Yang all flew over.

“How is it?” Xue Ying immediately asked.

“The moment he discovered our presence, he stopped escaping.” Chi Qiu Bai shook his head. “We had initially wanted to follow his path of escape, chasing him to where his true body was! But this General Yan Ze’s combat power is indeed extremely terrifying. His comprehension of the Realms is extremely high. Even though I’m considered to be a genius in the area of space, the moment I tried to sense his position, he had long since discovered us. Thus, he decided not to escape anymore, and instead started attacking frantically trying to kill us! Even with my Deity weapon, and the aid of the Deity warrior, I could only fight him to a standstill! Without the Deity warrior, I would certainly be at a disadvantage.”

“This General Yan Ze’s combat power is indeed really formidable.” Chao Qing nodded. “His Demonic Avatar is already stronger than us. I estimate that his true body... should be comparable to that of Mountain Lord He when he is using his Deity weapon.”

“That’s right.” Si Kong Yang frowned. “I hadn’t thought that this Demon General who hid himself the deepest would actually be that powerful. He grasped hold of the grade three True Meaning of Particles, and I feel that he should have reached stage three Realm!”

“Mn.”

Chi Qiu Bai and Chao Qing were similarly worried.

Currently, the Xia Clan had discovered that there were five Demon Generals in total! Their combat powers were different, but all of them could match the Demigods within the Demigod rankings! And that was when the Deity weapons of these top ten Demigods were included in their combat powers!

And today, the number of Demon Generals that could match the might of Mountain Lord He had been increased by one, to a total of two!

“Oh yes, for this General Yan Ze to suddenly attack you, Xue Ying, you must have been discovered by some demon which reported it.” Si Kong Yang looked down. “During this period of time, were there any mortals or wild beasts or animals who tried to escaping?”

“There was.” Xue Ying smiled. “That demon was afraid that you would come, so he tried his best to escape. But he was killed by me.”

“Oh, and what was the rank of this demon?” Si Kong Yang asked.

“Rank three,” Xue Ying replied.

He was not certain whether it was a rank three or four demon. But since it was inconclusive, he would rather report the lower rank! Actually, ever since Xue Ying fully grasped the complete grade two True Meaning, if Palace Head Chen saw that Xue Ying truly needed something, he would certainly provide him with various treasures! The Xia Clan originally had the rule that they would groom talents—for instance, when Chi Qiu Bai became a Demigod, he immediately received a Deity weapon without much delay. It was directly given to him! Of course... in the future when he became a Deity, before flying off to the Deity World, he would have to leave behind his weapon.

These Deity weapons were given by the ancestors of Xia Clan who paid a huge price to send them back. Thus, they could only be temporarily used by the Xia

Clan!

Unless it was a Deity weapon earned by himself.

“A rank three demon?” Si Kong Yang did not follow up, though he frowned and said in a low voice. “Why were you so careless that you slipped up in front of a demon? You have been quite prudent in the past.” He felt that since Xue Ying had grasped hold of the embryonic form of a grade two True Meaning, he should have been even more careful. In the past, Xue Ying had never encountered this problem.

“My bad, my bad.” Xue Ying did not elaborate.

In the past, he would absolutely not have been able to break through that spell using World Energy.

It was merely after grasping hold of two different grade two True Meanings that made filled him with confidence. Thus, whenever he went about his business, he would occasionally make a slip in his behaviour. And even if he did, and a demon discovered him, what was the worse that could happen? A Demigod coming to kill him? He could certainly kill that demon then!

.....

Chi Qiu Bai, Si Kong Yang and Chao Qing chatted briefly with Xue Ying before leaving the scene.

Of course, the matter about him grasping hold of the grade two True Meaning was kept a secret by Xue Ying! Even though the matter of invading the minor Transcendent World where the demons were hiding required the help of Faction Head Si Kong Yang and the others, he would still wait until that particular moment before telling them... After all, this kind of information had to be kept absolutely secret. The influence it would bring to the world was enormous! Palace Head Chen did not tell them, and neither would he take the initiative in doing so.

*Hu.* Xue Ying descended from the sky in front of that young girl.

“Uncle.” The young girl was excited, but she also filled with a complex sensation. “My, my parents...”

“Little miss Yan Han.” Xue Ying smiled, “You can rest assured. I’ve already told the Dragon Mountain Manor about this matter. With their speed, they will arrive here soon. As for the Gui Clan... since they dare to collaborate with the demons, the Dragon Mountain Manor has started to investigate this business and long since caught everyone within.”

“Ah.”

That golden-robed teenager and the other knights and mages were all stumped. The Gui Clan was doomed! Collaborating with the demons?

This green-robed male in front of him was actually the legendary character of the Tranquil Sun Province—Transcendent Dong Bo Xue Ying? As he was the one who ordered to attack him, there would be no way they could bribe those members of Dragon Mountain Manor.

“Sir Dong Bo Xue Ying, my Gui Clan is innocent. We were being maligned. We did not know that he is a demon either,” the golden-robed teenager hurriedly shouted out.

“Maybe you are right in the sense that he had hidden his identity within the Gui Clan, and that your Gui Clan is innocent.” Xue Ying glanced at him. “But be rest assured. The matter that I arranged for will not be messed up by Dragon Mountain Manor. If you all are truly innocent, we will let you off. If you aren’t... then nobody will be able to escape.”

“We’re doomed!” The golden-robed teenager lost his energy and fell to the ground in dismay.

Their Gui Clan truly did not know there was a demon amongst them. But if the Dragon Mountain Manor started interrogating each and every one of them, their most hidden secret would be revealed.

Xue Ying was not in a rush to leave. Instead, he spent a while more with this pitiful little miss until a flying ship belonging to Dragon Mountain Manor arrived. Xue Ying then left the matters in their hands and left the scene.

---

## Chapter 44 – Mission begins!

---

In a certain area hidden deep underground, there was an exotic looking battleship. Inside the battleship, within the main hall, General Yan Ze was holding onto his head in pain.

*Damn.* General Yan Ze felt the pain of his soul being torn apart as his Demonic Avatar got destroyed. That strand of soul had similarly been extinguished as a result. This led to a damage of his soul at a fundamental level. Currently, his expression was unbelievably malevolent. *Just that bit more, just that bit! The person I found this time was Dong Bo Xue Ying! But I would not have thought that the Xia Clan would actually dispatch a Deity warrior to protect him!*

Because of the strict limitations imposed by the Laws of the World, the ancestors of the Xia Clan could only send down a Deity warrior with the combat power of a peak Demigod, and not that of the Deity realm.

Even so, they were still Deity warriors! All of them were made of extraordinary materials. Much less to say Demigods, even if a true Deity attacked the Deity warrior, destroying it would be an arduous task. This time, the Deity warrior dispatched by the Xia Clan to protect Xue Ying was one with an exceptional ability to defend. If it was to focus entirely on defending, no Demon General would be able to kill Xue Ying.

*Unless several other Demon Generals team up with me, there isn't much hope of killing him.* General Yan Ze's figure was currently trembling. The pain caused by the destruction of a part of his soul was extreme. *However, since the Xia Clan has already given him a Deity warrior, I doubt that the Xia Clan will give him other protective treasures, right? If that's the case, all I need is a breath's worth of time.*

The more he pondered over it, the more General Yan Ze feel that killing Xue Ying was extremely difficult.

The Xia Clan had really not spared anything in protecting Xue Ying. As such, they would have a really hard time to assassinate him!

*If there was no Deity warrior, I believe that this time, I would have just killed him off.* General Yan Ze did not hold Xue Ying in his eyes. Maybe in the future, Xue Ying might become really powerful, but right now? General Yan Ze felt that one move would be enough to kill him!

*Whatever. I'll forget about it.*

*Since the Xia Clan regards him so highly, I will not have any chance of getting rid of him. If that's the case, I'll just forgo this. Even if he becomes stronger... he will still require about 200 to 300 years in order to become a top ten Demigod ranker. Becoming the first or second Demigod ranker would then require about 500 years. But who knows, he might get stuck in certain pathways for a longer period of time,* General Yan Ze thought to himself.

With combat prowess on the level of Chao Qing or Chi Qiu Bai, even if Xue Ying was added to the equation, there wouldn't be any complications.

Naturally, when the lice became quite numerous, one would not be afraid of the itch anymore! The peak combat strength of the Xia Clan had all along been so high that it held advantage over all else! Every single Deity warrior was terrifying in its own aspect. One more or one less Demigod in the top ten ranking would not change the final conclusion of the war that much! Unless, however, another Demigod with the power of 'Mountain Lord He' appeared, which would have a huge impact.

*But that'll happen hundreds of years later. Borrowing the souls of these humans, I'll try to improve my combat power as fast as possible. The moment I condense my Demonic Heart... hmph, hmph.* General Yan Ze was looking forward to that fateful day.

.....

Xue Ying was instead continuing with his search for traces of demons. Nine months later, he finally returned to the Snowrock Castle.

He had been cultivating and refining his spear techniques, trying to figure out the True Meaning of Mirage. An estimated half a year would be needed before he would succeed in grasping hold of the complete version.

Dragon Mountain Calendar, Year 9680, December.

“The matters of the world do not always follow the desires of one’s heart completely.” Xue Ying and Jing Qiu were sitting on top of the peak of Snowrock Castle side by side as a couple. They were looking down at part of the silvery world—the undulating curves of the terrain, the tall and magnificent mountains and the many villages sprinkled with light.

“Jing Qiu, I’ll be leaving the province soon,” Xue Ying said.

“Going away?” Jing Qiu was startled. “Is it very important?”

“When I get back, you will understand.” Xue Ying smiled. “Right now, it must be kept a secret.”

Jing Qiu did not continue her inquiry. She held onto Xue Ying’s hand and murmured, “You must be careful.”

“Mn.” Xue Ying nodded.

At the same time, Xue Ying sent a message to Palace Head Chen—“Palace Head Chen, I’m ready to leave!”

“Haha, I’d been waiting for this piece of news from you. Good. I’ve already arranged the meeting point for you all. Faction Head Si Kong Yang, Mountain Lord He and Eternal Wind will rush over. You should wait for about the time it takes to brew a cup of tea before setting off,” Palace Head Chen immediately replied. At the same time, he sent over a map with the accurate location plotted.

The moment he saw it, Xue Ying understood. It was the peak of an unnamed mountain about 900 kilometers away from the Eternal Wind Academy.

After the time taken to brew a cup of tea.

Xue Ying bade farewell to Jing Qiu.

*Shua.*

He first teleported himself to a valley 50 kilometers away, before waving his

hand and displaying the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, forcibly tearing through a passageway through the space! With the might of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, he could tear a complete passageway for him to move through space, something that even Demigods weaker than him could accomplish.

The reason why he did not display such an ability before Jing Qiu was because he did not want it to be revealed. Even though he had absolute trust in her, this matter would implicate the entire Xia Clan! Thus, every single step he took had to be taken with extreme caution. Furthermore, there were many eyes all around the Snowrock Castle. Tearing through the space would create a disturbance in the surroundings.

*Hu.* Xue Ying immediately flew through the space crack.

This was a grotesque and variegated pathway.

Xue Ying followed through the space path with his utmost ability, flying through it while the Transcendent Qi protected his body by imbuing it with the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing and using the True Meaning to tear through the obstacles of space.

Following down the road all the way.

After a breath of time, *si la*— The Transcendent Qi imbued with the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing immediately tore through the space membrane, allowing him to enter the mortal world once again.

.....

On the peak of a mountain.

Mountain Lord He's aura felt extremely distant. Faction Head Si Kong Yang's aura contained the overbearingness of a sun. As for Chi Qiu Bai, his white hair fluttered, filled with some emotional evocation, but his aura felt so nimble that it could vaguely create terror in other people's hearts.

"Palace Head Chen requested for us to come here, and asked me to conceal the area and not let others discover any disturbances over here?" Chi Qiu Bai was puzzled. "What is he thinking of doing?"



“We’ll know soon.” Mountain Lord He was extremely calm.

“I feel that this should be an extremely important matter,” Si Kong Yang said.

Chi Qiu Bai’s mouth twitched. “Of course it’s important. The two of you are the strongest of our Xia Clan. For the two of you to take action... how could it not be important?”

After a moment.

Chi Qiu Bai, Mountain Lord He and Si Kong Yang looked towards the distant space. They could feel a power nearing them at rapid speed.

*Si la—*

In the sky, the space was torn apart before a black-robed teenager came flying out.

“Ah!” Chi Qiu Bai and Si Kong Yang were left stunned, their eyes wide opened.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying?” Mountain Lord He was shocked too, though he was adorned with a grin.

“Xue Ying, you, you could tear through space to make a passageway?” Chi Qiu Bai was staring at him. Usually, only Demigods could do such a thing! Of course, some Transcendents below the Demigod realm might also be able to... if they were specialised in space. But Xue Ying did not specialise in the Profound Mystery of Space.

“You?” Si Kong Yang started becoming anxious. “Have you?”

“I’ve already grasped hold of a grade two True Meaning.” Xue Ying arrived at the peak of the mountain, nodding with a smile.

“Grade two True Meaning?” Mountain Lord He’s eyes brightened. He laughed as he saw the reactions of Si Kong Yang and Chi Qiu Bai. “It seems that you have been hiding a lot of things from me.”

“Haha, I’ve been expecting the coming of this day ever since you grasped hold of the embryonic form of the True Meaning. Haha, our Xia Clan finally got its second Transcendent in history to have grasped hold of a grade two True Meaning.” Chi Qiu Bai was extremely excited. “Since you’ve grasped hold of a grade two True Meaning, are you thinking of attacking now?”

“That’s right! For the sake of preventing any leak of this mission, I did not tell anyone else,” Xue Ying explained. “I’m sure you all know this. The Elites of the demons have taken over those five minor Transcendent Worlds, causing endless problems for us! Attacking these five minor Transcendent Worlds has a huge implication for everyone. Thus, I had to keep it a secret, an absolute secret! Until today, that is.”

“Haha, that’s terrific.” Chi Qiu Bai was unbelievably delighted.

“Our Xia Clan is really being cared for, since a talent like you, Xue Ying, has emerged,” Mountain Lord He congratulated him. “Solving this disaster will allow our days thereafter to be much better. We don’t have to be worried of the Demonic Avatars of rank five demons assassinating us anymore.”

“Old Chen is really strict at keeping secrets. My Water Daoist Faction’s Transcendent has grasped hold of a grade two True Meaning and yet, he did not tell me. I’ve even sent a message to him just now, and he replied... it’s all for the Xia Clan! And he’s not wrong at that!” Si Kong Yang continued, “After this business with those minor Transcendent Worlds is over, I’ll definitely beat him up.”

“I’ll support you. Do invite me when the time comes.” Mountain Lord He smiled widely.

Xue Ying gave a laugh before deciding to talk about the main topic. “This time, the mission is extremely simple. I’ll enter those five minor Transcendent Worlds one by one, and attack them! The three of you can remain guard at the void layer in between space outside the minor Transcendent World’s space membrane! If any demons escape, chase down and kill them! The more demon elites we kill, the better it will be!”

He was absolutely confident in succeeding with his attack! But he did not have a certainty in killing every single demon!

“When you attack the first minor Transcendent World, I’m afraid that the other four worlds will be notified as well. There are some weak Heart-Linking Demons amongst them who could communicate across worlds.” Chi Qiu Bai frowned.

“Rest assured, I’ll try my best to get rid of these Heart-Linking Demons first,”

Xue Ying answered.

“Under the protection of the arrays, would you not alarm all the other demons as well when you kill those Heart-Linking Demons?” Mountain Lord He asked. “Furthermore, you can’t really determine which of them are the Heart-Linking Demons from the outside.”

“I’ll try my best.” Xue Ying smiled.

Mountain Lord He, Si Kong Yang, Chi Qiu Bai and Xue Ying discussed briefly amongst themselves.

“Time to set off! We’ll first go to the first minor Transcendent World!” Mountain Lord He took the initiative. With a wave of his hand, the space was soundlessly torn apart in a gentle manner. Thereafter, the four of them entered and flew through the void in between space.

Travelling through the void layer in between space, they arrived at their destination very quickly.

*Hu hu hu~*

Right in front of their eyes there was a huge world membrane surrounding the minor Transcendent World situated in the chaotic void layer.

“After I discover the bases of those demons, I’ll inform you of their positions using my Qi Avatar. You can guard these positions from inside the void layer,” Xue Ying said. The minor Transcendent World was too big, so it would be impossible to guard the entire place.

They could not communicate from the minor Transcendent World to those located in the void layer.

But since they had their Qi Avatar in the mortal world, they could naturally still exchange information!

*Si la!* Xue Ying took a step, carrying the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing on his body. *Sou*, he immediately tore through the world membrane. After entering, the world membrane rapidly started healing itself.

“We’ll wait for Xue Ying’s news outside then.” Mountain Lord He, Si Kong Yang and Chi Qiu Bai were all waiting in the chaotic void layer in between space.

And Xue Ying himself had started taking action within the minor Transcendent World!

---

# Chapter 45 – The Palace of the Demons

---

Palace Head Chen was currently standing in front of the door to his study room, overlooking the mountains outside the Xia Capital. However, the focus of his eyes wasn't on any of those mountains. The one he was currently thinking of deep inside his heart was Xue Ying. *Xue Ying, you must succeed! The fates of half of my Xia Clan's Transcendents lie on this gamble of yours. You must not lose!*

In the chaotic void layer in between space, Mountain Lord He, Chi Qiu Bai and Si Kong Yang were all nervously waiting.

Other than Xue Ying himself, there were only four people in the entire Xia Clan who knew about the mission.

They were all nervously waiting.

With Xue Ying's current combat power, they had faith that he would certainly be able to get rid of the demons' bases, but the enemies he was facing were, after all, still the elites of the demon's army! Previously, they dispatched the peak Saint Transcendents who specialized in breaking arrays, yet they could not even unravel the outermost array at all. This sufficed in proving that the Demon Army's arrays were not that easy to break through!

And the moment they failed...

They were not willing to accept that conclusion at all!

*Disciple brother Xue Ying.* On the Snowrock Mountain, in the Snow Eagle territory, there was also a woman worrying about the safety of Xue Ying.

\*\*\*\*\*

In the minor Transcendent World.

Xue Ying was currently standing in a vast wasteland. This part of the wasteland

was devoid of any creatures—it seemed that the demons had long slaughtered every single being.

Looking down at his wrist, there was no green-gray wristband. Xue Ying was also quite nervous. *Right now, everything depends entirely on my own abilities!* That Deity warrior who had always followed him was ultimately of the Demigod realm. Under the regulations of the Laws of the World, it could not enter this minor Transcendent World.

*This time, I must succeed. Failure is not an option!*

Xue Ying would not accept failure under any conditions.

Should he fail, the thousands of years would see large numbers of Transcendents belonging to the Xia Clan dying! If he won, that loss would be greatly reduced.

Even though it was easy to talk about the death of half the Transcendents, in reality, every single death was not just part of a statistic, but represented a life. Like Peng Shan, Zi Che Gu feng, Chao Qing, Yu Feng and Pu Yang Bo, they were close friends of his for many years. Even the person whom he was most concerned for, Jing Qiu... and the currently Legend ranked father of his, Dong Bo Lie, his little brother, Qing Shi, all had a probability of dying during the long war.

*These five bases are the greatest threat to my Xia Clan! The greatest calamity! I must get rid of them thoroughly!* Xue Ying was absolutely clear of the burden placed on his shoulders.

This mission of resolving the disaster laid entirely on his figure! If he could not succeed, then the other Saints would have no hopes at all!

*Hu~*

The wind whistled through this part of the wasteland.

Xue Ying closed his eyes, borrowing the True Meaning of Star to start feeling the surrounding space. With him as the center, anything in a radius of 50 kilometers around him was under the control of his Gravity Domain! As for the area outside that range, his senses would start getting muffled exponentially... but relying on the fluctuations wrought onto space itself, he could still sense things happening even further.

Judging solely on how good one was at feeling fluctuations, the True Meaning of Star would excel over other True Meanings.

However, his True meaning of Extreme Piercing would be much stronger when judged based on the ability to forcibly penetrate through space to teleport.

*Mn?* Xue Ying used his control over the surrounding 50 kilometers to sense all strands of space fluctuations beyond that.

Suddenly—

To his right, approximately 4500 kilometers away, there was an area of absolute quietness! That area did not have any space fluctuations at all. Based on his senses... that area of absolute quietness would even cause others to feel apprehensive of it.

*That's the location!* Xue Ying thought. *The base of the demons should be located right there!*

The scale of the minor Transcendent World was much smaller than that of a major Transcendent World, and even smaller when compared to the mortal world. Thus, Xue Ying did not need to traverse to other places. Just relying on his True Meaning of Star to feel for any fluctuations in space, he could sense a total distance of approximately 15,000 kilometers.

*The entire minor Transcendent World only has this area of absolute quietness!* Xue Ying opened his eyes, looking towards the northeastern direction of the wasteland. *Space fluctuation is a natural phenomenon. But since that area is so quiet, there must be an external influence!*

To set up an array...

The most fundamental step would be to seal the space shut. Otherwise, the enemy would easily teleport himself inside the base! Even though not many Demigods were able to seal space, many such arrays still existed. Those among the Transcendent mages who excelled in this could easily refine a set of arrays for that purpose. After all, it was an absolute precursor for setting up arrays!

*The Demon Army will bring with them arrays of differing strengths, depending on the strength of their elite,* Xue Ying thought. *According to the information provided by Palace Head Chen, the array set-up this time should be so*

*formidable that even the outermost layer could not be broken by the previous team of Transcendents.*

*I must examine it.*

*Two different plans for differing situations*, Xue Ying decided in his mind. He would count on his current combat power to plan for any contingencies. Regardless, he would still have to examine the arrays in order to decide upon which of the plans to use.

*Let's begin!*

*Sou!*

Xue Ying immediately turned into a stream of light soundlessly, entering deep into the ground. With his grasp of the True Meaning of Star, his travelling speed underground was quite terrifying.

As for the reason why he was travelling underground, it was because he had been afraid that there might be several weak demons patrolling above ground! The demons would also borrow the World Energy to investigate for any disturbances. Xue Ying could only try his best to prevent such scenarios from happening. Of course, according to the intelligence provided by Xia Clan, the demons did not have any plans of having patrols!

That was natural.

This location which they had their base set up in would be their accommodation for more than a thousand years. If they wanted to borrow on World Energy to be on the lookout all the time? How tiring would that be! Xue Ying had already felt fatigue even when he had his senses out for half a year continuously. Adding on their absolute confidence in the arrays, they did not feel threatened at all.

In a short moment, Xue Ying was just about 100 kilometers away from that place of absolute quietness.

Deep underground.

A particle was currently hiding. It condensed into a black-robed teenager. However, this figure had fluctuations of the Law of Profound Mysteries, allowing



him to be One with the Earth.

*Mn?* Xue Ying started using his True Meaning of Extreme Piercing for sensing. Layers after layers of power.

The power of sealing space shut, the power of thunder, the power of darkness... clearly, these were the defenses that made up the array. Those demons were living in the center of the array, with the surrounding array protecting them! Without penetrating through this obstacle, one would be unable to harm those demons!

*The obstacles are quite formidable, Xue Ying thought. It's alright though. My True Meaning of Extreme Piercing could penetrate 15 kilometers in one go!*

Under ordinary circumstances, he could penetrate through 50 kilometers of distance easily.

As for the obstacles caused by the arrays, the weaker ones would not affect such an offensive True Meaning. The True Meaning of Extreme Piercing was absolutely tyrannical! All Myriad Existences would be penetrated by it! Regardless of what kind, it could still penetrate through all the arrays! But if the obstacles were too large, then the distance it could penetrate through would decrease drastically. If the arrays were extremely earthshaking, then not even Extreme Piercing could penetrate through it! Of course, as Xue Ying's understanding of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing deepened, his penetrative power would also become stronger!

*15 kilometers, Xue Ying pondered. The area of absolute quietness enveloped an area of about 30 kilometers in radius!*

*I just have to forcibly penetrate through it twice! Then I could enter the inner area!*

*The first plan will easily succeed if that's the case.*

*Time to begin!*

*Shua!*

With two teleports, Xue Ying appeared above the surface from a distance 50 kilometers underground.

On the surface of the Earth.

The black-robed teenager Xue Ying appeared in mid-air. He could feel the aura of darkness ahead of him. That vast and obscure aura surrounded quite an extravagant-looking demon palace. This palace occupied a total of 50 kilometers in area!

*Kill!* The moment Xue Ying appeared above the ground, he did not have any hesitation. Immediately, he displayed his Extreme Piercing!

*Hong!*

Xue Ying instantly disappeared from his original location, penetrating through the layers and layers of obstacles, including the obstacle that sealed space itself which was clearly unable to stop the Extreme Piercing! Being a grade two True Meaning that was on the extreme end of offense... it would be truly rare to see even a Demigod ranked demon in the Dark Abyss having it. Thus, the Demon Army would not be able to prepare for an array to counteract this Extreme Piercing. The price of preparation would be too great!

*Mn?* The moment he appeared, Xue Ying was already inside the darkness filled part of the array. He did not stop displaying his Extreme Piercing!

The speed of these two Extreme Piercings was very shocking.

Ahead of him, Xue Ying felt the world brightened as he appeared inside an extravagant-looking main hall. The lights of the hall were still bright, and there was currently an ugly demon snoring in his sleep.

---

## Chapter 46 – Kill!

---

*I'm here!* Appearing in the extravagant main hall, Xue Ying's eyes were filled with killing intent. Without any hesitation, he immediately displayed the True Meaning of Star's Gravity Domain! The Laws of Profound Mysteries inherent to the True Meaning of Star instantly produced a frightening level of gravity.

With Xue Ying as the center, in an area with a 50 kilometers radius, whether above or below him...

*Hong!*

The frightening gravitational force descended!

.....

Within one of the secret rooms of the demon palace, two rank three demons were currently stationed. This room was being used to monitor any activities on the arrays. Every single day, there would be other rank three demons coming to take over the shift! This elite demon team could be considered quite prudent. During the long-term monitoring of the arrays, any slight disturbance would be immediately reported upwards.

"Mn?" The moment Xue Ying first displayed his Extreme Piercing in forcibly barging his way into the arrays, these two demons felt something.

"What is happening?"

"There's been a disturbance?"

The two of them did not have time to investigate further. Before they were able to report upwards to the rank five demons or tell the Heart-Linking demons, the frightening Gravity Domain started! There was an extremely short period of time that passed between Xue Ying's double display of Extreme Piercing and the

time when the Gravity Domain of the True Meaning of Star descended!!

According to the Demon Army's inner regulations...

The moment they confirmed an invasion or attack, they would immediately report to the higher-ups and to the Heart-Linking demon. The Heart-Linking demon would then directly inform the other generals!

In reality, Xue Ying's actions were too fast, not giving those two demons in charge of monitoring the arrays any time to contemplate over what to do. After that... they would never get the chance to think again!

*Hong!*

The frightening gravitational force immediately enveloped the entire demon palace, including the area covered by the array.

*Peng!* The entire demon palace exploded and collapsed immediately. Those extremely hard stone materials and the spell-refined palace were completely demolished. Under this sort of gravitational force, any ordinary mortal material would not be able to maintain its original material properties, breaking its most fundamental structure into pieces.

“Ah!”

“Ah.”

The eyes of those two demons in charge of monitoring the arrays were wide-open. Their demon bodies were quite tough, with the integrity of their external scales intact. Yet from their mouths spurted large volumes of blood, and from the gap in between their scales, something akin to mist was spraying out. The most frightening part, though, was that their insides had already become paste under the frightening gravitational power.

Even though the two demons had died immediately, their figures still flew upwards towards Xue Ying under the aid of gravity.

“This is—”

“Ah!”

“What?”

In various places within the demon palace, there were demons sleeping, eating, drinking, cultivating and sparring. All of them, even the weak, small Heart-Linking demon... had been affected by the incoming gravitational force. Their external demon bodies were tough enough to withstand even attacks from Saint rank weapons. Their inner flesh and organs, including their brains, were also quite tough, but compared to their scales, these parts could not withstand the terrifying Gravity Domain!

Their flesh shattered into pieces, fresh blood immediately spurted out from their bodies as their brains turned into paste.

And now, all of the bodies started leaving the ground with high speed under the attraction forces, heading straight towards Xue Ying!

.....

Xue Ying originally stood on the main hall's floor, but his collapsing surroundings forced him to fly upwards.

In the surrounding 50 kilometers of radius, the many treasures used to set up their arrays also started collapsing. Some of them remained whole, but those ordinary items made from mortal grade quality materials such as soil and stones completely shattered. Demon bodies after demon bodies continued on their flight towards Xue Ying. Those demons who could remain whole were at least rank three. As for those weaker demons, their entire bodies had already shattered into pieces.

“Transcendent of the Xia Clan!”

Amongst those demons who were being attracted towards Xue Ying, there were five who survived. Currently, they were standing in mid-air, trying to withstand the gravitational force. They had already trained their bodies to the upper limit, gaining an undying body! For humans, training to the stage of having an undying body would be extremely difficult. Even Demigods of the Xia Clan could not attain that stage easily. But demons were different. Their innate talents were too great—their fleshy bodies surpassed even those of people with Primordial Bloodlines! In the Saint realm, some of them could reach the undying body stage. Under the powerful gravitational force, even if their brain had suffered damage, they would still begin recovering immediately thereafter.

Several Transcendent materials and demon bodies flew rapidly towards Xue Ying.

Xue Ying was located right in mid-air at the center of the domain.

“Set.”

Xue Ying spoke in a cold tone. Transcendent Qi started streaming upward from his figure. This fiery-red Qi started forming a spherical cover! The True Meaning of Star was imbued on the surface of this spherical cover, causing this seemingly weak Qi cover... to be as hard as a Star's.

Even with the countless bodies of the dead demons and Transcendent goods clashing against the spherical cover, it did not even shake from the impact.

“Collect.” Xue Ying waved his hand, causing the Transcendent goods to fly into it. These goods were materials used for constructing an array. Some of them were the weapons and storage treasures of those demons.

Glancing at the broken corpses, Xue Ying snorted. The original gravitational force immediately turned into a repulsion force!

*Hong hong hong!*

Those corpses were like explosives, flying away from him at a rapid speed.

The True Meaning of Star's Gravity Domain only had two directions. One was an attractive force towards Xue Ying! And the other was a repulsive force away from him!

“So formidable.” Standing far away in space, whether it was the attractive or repulsive forces, these five demons only had their bodies shake from the forces.

“I had not thought that he could instantly destroy the array, and with just a single move, every single demon without an undying body would die!” The black-robed demon transmitted his answer over. “Everyone, please be careful. We cannot belittle this Transcendent of the Xia Clan!”

“Such a pity that even Bi Lin has died!” The crimson-horned demon transmitted. “Bi Lin was a rank five demon, yet his body had not attained the undying stage. This time, his death was really regretful!”

Originally, there were three rank five and three rank four demons...

With just a single use of the Gravity Domain by Xue Ying, he immediately exterminated them all, with only two rank five and three rank four demons left alive.

.....

“It’s just the five of you left!” Xue Ying swept across them with his eyes. A fiery-red spear appeared in his hands. The spear body was akin to revolving clouds of fire, and the spearhead was as bright as the stars. This was none other than the Demigod weapon Stellar Fire-Cloud Spear! To Saints, Demigod weapons provided a huge amount of help. However, right now, with Xue Ying’s Demigod-like combat power, this weapon did not provide as much aid as before. Only with a Deity weapon could his combat power reach an even higher level! He continued using this Stellar Fire-Cloud Spear as, after all, he quite liked its sharpness!

“You must be Dong Bo Xue Ying?” The crimson-horned demon stood away from him. He was already wearing a pair of claw-like weapons on his hands.

“Wu Lang?” Xue Ying’s vision landed on him. “You must be the one who killed my Sister Ling Shu, am I right?”

“Your Tranquil Sun Province’s Chen Ling Shu?” Wu Lang sneered. “That’s right, it’s me. I was the one who killed this Transcendent of your Xia Clan! She was a Transcendent mage and had almost escaped successfully from me! Regardless, I still killed her. Today, you will also die right here, right now! Just now, you displayed the True Meaning of Gravity, am I right? And for you to barge into this place, you should also have grasped hold of another sort of strange True Meaning?”

True Meaning of Gravity was a grade three True Meaning! It was a branch lower than the True Meaning of Star.

“So much nonsense. The five of you must die today.” Xue Ying wielded his spear, sweeping across the five of them with his eyes. These five demons had an undying body. He could not kill them with his flying darts. Instead, he had to enter close-combat with them! The other three rank four demons were not worth mentioning. It was merely the two rank five demons whom he had to spend a bit more time on.

“Kill!” Another black-robed demon had a back full of sabers lined up in a fan-like formation. There were a total of 19 sabers. With a wave of his hand, *hua hua hua* ~ Saber after saber came flying out. These sabers brought with them a strange sort of wave, their path of motion being quite unpredictable. These sabers went against the law of motion and were flying at an extremely terrifying speed!

Right now, that black-robed demon was like a large spider, with those sabers akin to webs being shot out at Xue Ying.

Thereafter, with a movement of his hand, the other four demons also surrounded Xue Ying.

“Hmph!” Xue Ying snorted. His Gravity Domain once again descended! The surrounding space started distorting!

*Shua!* That crimson-horned demon suddenly appeared beside Xue Ying. The array that sealed space had already been broken. Even though the surrounding space was distorted, the strongest demon within the palace, Wu Lang, could still teleport! With his enormous claw-like weapon, he swiped right at Xue Ying. Everywhere that claw passed through shattered the space itself.

---



## Chapter 47 – This is Extreme Piercing (I)

---

The demons were currently synchronizing perfectly, especially the two strongest rank five demons—the crimson-horned demon and the black-robed demon who used 19 different sabers. They were attacking Xue Ying simultaneously.

Seeing the incoming attacks, Xue Ying floated unperturbed in mid-air, not bothering to hide the killing intent in his eyes.

*Shua.*

He took a single step, forcibly penetrating through space itself to arrive at a distant space many hundreds of meters away.

The five demons who had initially surrounded him and were closing towards his location realised that with a single Extreme Piercing, Xue Ying appeared in an entirely different position. These five demons were now situated towards the east of Xue Ying's current position.

“Die!”

*Hong long long* ~ Xue Ying extended his right hand, producing a dazzling, fiery-red light which exploded out from his palm. The fiery-red Transcendent Qi surged out to form an enormous pillar, which transformed into the shape of a fan and swept across in the direction of the demons! This enormous, fiery-red pillar of light was imbued with the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing. Yet due to its wide area of effect, the technique's might would be spread out equally.

But that was enough!

Being imbued with the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, the fiery-red Transcendent Qi's fan-like structure was extremely fast. As they were originally

situated so close together, other than the crimson-horned demon who could escape the area of effect, the other four had no chance at all!

“Mn?” Even though Wu Lang could escape, he had chosen not to. “He actually displayed an attack with such a wide area of effect? With its power being spread out so thinly... I really want to see how powerful it is.”

If he could not even defend from this attack, then it would be better for him to just admit defeat and suicide! This was his best opportunity to investigate Xue Ying’s current combat power.

“Hmph!” Placing his gigantic, claw-like weapon in front of his body, Wu Lang covered it with his True Meaning of Shattered Space. Using that tyrannical demon body of his, he stood firm against the incoming dazzling, fiery-red pillar of light.

The two True Meanings clashed.

At the juncture when they hit each other...

Wu Lang’s expression turned unsightly. He could feel some terrifying Laws of Profound Mysteries suppressing him in an overbearing way. Fortunately, it was an attack with a wide area of effect encompassing an area with a radius of about one kilometer. But that small part of the technique’s might still consumed his energy rapidly, especially considering he was currently using his Demonic Energy alongside the True Meaning of Shattered Space to defend himself from the attack!

“How is that possible? Even when he uses such an attack with such a wide area of effect, he can still suppress me?” Wu Lang was shocked. “Doesn’t that mean that in a one-on-one fight, I wouldn’t even have any chance of survival?”

This Wu Lang, who had a grade three True Meaning, could not even defend himself confidently against an attack with a wide area of effect. The other four demons could be considered even more miserable.

“Ah!” The black-robed demon groaned painfully. His True Meaning of Wave Domain could not match the might of the attack. It was as if he tried defending himself with a sieve, the attack immediately penetrated through his protective layer of True Meaning. However, the outer black robe he was wearing allowed

him to survive this attack. That robe was an extremely powerful defensive Demigod grade treasure, and it was during crucial situations like this that it protected his entire body from harm. Even though Transcendent Qi could not forcibly penetrate through it, the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing's terrifying penetrative force... was akin to a lofty mountain pressing its entire weight on his body, causing even that undying body of his to start disintegrating. Blood spurted out of his mouth!

"How could he be so powerful?" The black-robed demon's eyes were filled with disbelief.

"This Dong Bo Xue Ying... how could he be so much more powerful than all of us."

"This Transcendent of the Xia Clan... is too powerful!"

"Sir Wu Lang, save us!"

The other three rank four demons were the most miserable out of all of them!

Had it been a simple attack with a mere flying dart like penetrative force, they could have still used the inherent vitality of their bodies to recover from the short term destruction! Even though this type of injury was extremely serious—even more than being pierced through the head or the heart—the life force of an undying body would still allow them to survive 8 to 10 of those attacks.

But the current scenario was completely different.

Xue Ying's wide area of effect attack was meant to target these three rank four demons. That majestically thick fan of light had swept across them, such that he still trusted the terrifying might brought by his True Meaning of Extreme Piercing even though the Transcendent Qi was spread out thinly! Ultimately, just the power of a peak stage Saint realm Qi was too weak.

Instead, the Transcendent Qi was there to act as a cover.

*Hu hu hu~* The fiery-red light suppressed the three of them. Their protective layers of True Meaning could not even defend them against the attack, and neither did they have the protective treasure of the black-robed demon to protect the different parts of their bodies. Within a split second, their undying bodies completely crumbled apart. At the same time, all the particles which had

disintegrated started recovering due to their powerful life forces. Yet as soon as they started recovering, these fundamental particles which constituted their undying bodies began crumbling apart once again under the Laws of Profound Mysteries of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing.

The sweep of the fiery-red light pillar lasted a full second.

Only when Xue Ying could no longer feel the aura of these three rank four demons did he stop.

The fan-like pillar of light which had reached close to two kilometers in radius finally began returning back to its source. All the Transcendent Qi he had released entered back into Xue Ying! This Qi amounted to about 20 percent of his total; of course, he could collect it back since this move of his depended solely on the might of his True Meaning. So there was not much consumption in terms of his Qi.

One wide area of effect attack!

Caused three rank four demons to die!

*Shua.* The moment Xue Ying finished displaying his previous move, the next Extreme Piercing started appearing again in front of that black-robed demon. This time, the Stellar Fire-Cloud Spear in his hand directly pierced towards him.

“Ah!” The black-robed demon was so frightened that he continuously hid himself under the protection of that black robe. That was because the black robe could protect his entire body, and considering the Demigod grade materials it was made from... Xue Ying could not destroy it.

*Hong!*

The spear brought with it a terrifying penetrative force piercing right at that black robe, causing the power to transmit inwards. The demon's figure shattered instantly, but this was merely the destruction of his scales, flesh and bones! The most fundamental layer of atoms had not disintegrated. With this type of injury... he could still survive even after a hundred or a thousand attacks!

*What should I do, what should I do? Will I have to hide in this defensive treasure of mine all the way? But if this keeps going, my life force will eventually run out.* That black-robed demon was anxious deep inside his heart, but he could

do nothing but hide inside that black robe of his.

*Hong!* Xue Ying did not hesitate to attack a second time.

At the same time the spear pierced out, it suddenly disappeared in mid-air, and when it reappeared, the spearhead was actually inside the body of that black-robed demon! This spearhead was imbued with the Profound Mysteries of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, which destroyed his body so fast that even his most fundamental atoms started disintegrating.

*How could that be—* The black-robed demon was incredibly alarmed and frightened. *How could this Dark Abyss Demigod robe of mine fail to defend against that attack?*

Extreme Piercing.

Everything would be penetrated by it. It could forcibly pierce through space and material before appearing inside the body of his enemy! But at the moment it appeared, it would still be resisted by the material layer of that black robe! After all, without any resistance at all on the material level... the spear would have to pierce through that black robe before entering the body of that demon.

Thus, at that juncture when it appeared, the spear and the black robe would have a repulsive effect on the material layer!

To be safe, he decided to only use the spearhead to block that black robe.

This spearhead was, after all, made up of Stellar Stones from the Deity World! What it was famous for was its sharpness and hardness that could match the might of a Mid-Grade Demigod without needing any arrays to improve its strength! Right now, in this battle on the material layer, the spearhead had clearly won! Its material remained completely intact, though the same could not be said for the black robe, as a hole had appeared on it.

This was the Extreme Piercing! Wanting to depend on a Demigod rank treasure to survive? What a joke!

One must still depend on his own combat power. Either his body had to be strong enough to resist against the attack, or his True Meaning would have to be powerful enough to resist the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing! Otherwise, death would be the only conclusion!

*It was actually pierced through?* Being frightened off ever since the wave of Transcendent Qi from before, Wu Lang was currently teleporting in an attempt to escape from the area, only to discover shockingly that the Dark Abyss Demigod robe was pierced through? Since he was currently escaping for his life, he had missed out on something. In reality, it was actually the repulsion on the layer of the Laws of Profound Mysteries that led to the Stellar Stone and the materials used to refine that black robe to compete against each other on the material layer. All of that led to the frightening end result—of piercing through a Demigod grade robe!

---

## Chapter 48 – This is Extreme Piercing (II)

---

After the attack, a hole appeared in the Demigod rank robe, damaging the lines of symbols that made up the arrays and drastically dropping the robe's defensive capability. With a *peng*, the Transcendent Qi on his spear erupted with force, causing the robe to explode outward, and the demon's weakened fundamental particles frantically attempted to reconstruct its body.

"Escape?" Xue Ying did not care about the black-robed demon any longer. Instead, he looked towards the current escapee—Wu Lang—who was teleporting away as fast as he could. The surrounding space was, however, under Xue Ying's Gravity Domain which could even cause space to distort. In this situation, teleporting was an extremely arduous task to accomplish. Furthermore, any normal teleportation had a limited distance. Teleporting tens of kilometers at once already showed he was an expert. Yet in this current environment, Wu Lang could merely teleport two to three kilometers every time.

Previously, after that attack with a wide area of effect...

Xue Ying did not hesitate to use Extreme Piercing to pierce through space, arriving in front of the black-robed demon before attacking him with just two spear attacks! The second spear strike actually managed to pierce through his Demigod rank robe.

How much time would this take?

In this short amount of time, Wu Lang could only teleport six times, escaping about 15 kilometers away!

*Sou.*

With a single step, Xue Ying arrived in front of Wu Lang. Using his Extreme Piercing, he could travel up to 50 kilometers at a time. At the same time, he

brazenly stabbed his spear out!

Facing the terrifying spear...

Wu Lang was dazed.

There wasn't enough time for him to ponder over the terrifying technique displayed by Xue Ying, considering the short distance between them! He immediately teleported away!

*Shua—*

*Chi!* Xue Ying's spear kept advancing towards the place the demon teleported from.

"Ah!"

As Wu Lang disappeared from mid-air and reappeared about a meter away, his head had already been pierced through!

*How is this possible!* Wu Lang's eyes were wide-open.

Teleportation might seem very fast...

But in reality, it still required a certain amount of time to activate. If this period of time became negligible, as it was for Chi Qiu Bai and Chao Qing when they were saving the Transcendents of the Xia Clan, then he would not be tearing through space to make a passageway. Instead, he would teleport continuously without any break!

The logic behind teleportation was to reach a resonance between their body and space itself. They would then follow the intended space wave out of the countless others before teleporting to another position!

Thus, the speed of teleportation was equivalent to the speed of the space waves.

But Extreme Piercing... meant being able to pierce through anything. It would similarly penetrate forcibly through the space wave itself! Since it could penetrate through it, then the velocity it could reach would naturally transcend the speed of the space waves.

*Hong~* Wu Lang's body was completely destroyed, with even the elementary



particles shattering into pieces. Regardless, his body still started recovering.

Xue Ying stood by the side before casually stabbing out with his spear!

Every time these particles started reforming, Xue Ying would once again stab outward, causing these particles to shatter. The life force of Wu Lang's undying body was being rapidly depleted.

*How, how could this be possible? I'd already entered the void, yet he could pierce through it and kill me?* His soul was latched onto every single particle, so he could still think even while he was in this state. *This, what exactly is this True Meaning?*

Even though he was an extremely formidable rank five demon...

In the vast Abyss, he was merely a small character. The resources he could attain could not compare with those given by the Temple of the Earth God or that of the Xia Clan with their long history of ancestors building a firm foundation! He was, after all, surviving on a piece of land while fighting wars against other armies. His combat experience was mainly with other demons at a similar level. Thus, he had never interacted with those truly formidable demons at the peak.

*I, am I truly going to die?* Wu Lang could feel the most fundamental construct—the life force of the particles that made up his body—diminishing rapidly.

The young Transcendent would stab out with his spear every time his life particles started recovering!

*I would never have thought that I'd die in the mortal world at the hands of a Saint. I think he was called Dong Bo Xue Ying?* Wu Lang's life force continued diminishing.

.....

Those countless particles were trying their utmost to condense back into the body of the demon. At that point, a vague sound transmission filled with unreconciled fury arrived. "What is this True Meaning? Just what exactly is it?"

"Die."

Xue Ying's eighth spear stabbed outwards in an attack unlike the previous ones

which spread out over a wide area. This time, he used a focused attack with the True Meaning imbued into his spear techniques. Every single technique was extremely powerful. Once that attack came down, the life force in the particles was finally depleted completely. In that moment, the demon's body completely disappeared out of existence, with only his Demigod treasures left behind.

Every time Xue Ying stabbed his spear into the demon, he had to wait a moment for those particles to recover and use up life force. Thus, it took a much longer period of time—approximately one second—to kill Wu Lang.

*Hu~* That earth-shattering, fiery-red Transcendent Qi returned at this moment to Xue Ying. Because of the previous large area of effect attack, his Qi would require some time to travel back to him.

*He runs quite fast, eh?* Xue Ying looked towards the distant black-robed demon who turned into a stream of light as he tried to escape from his predicament. *Even under my Gravity Domain, he actually reached a distance of 15 kilometers?*

If he were able to teleport, one second would have sufficed to escape out of the Gravity Domain's 50 kilometre radius!

However, that black-robed demon could not teleport within this Gravity Domain and had to resort merely to flying in desperation! Despite the terrifying gravity's suppression, he could still travel a shocking 15 kilometers in a single second. Still... that did not serve much purpose! Xue Ying would be able to control the entire battlefield as long as his enemy did not escape from his domain's 50 kilometers radius. If his enemy had escaped out of his domain, then he would have long since thrown out several flying darts at him!

*Wu Lang is dead. Wu Lang actually died just like that? His True Meaning is too terrifying. At the very least, it should be a legendary grade two True Meaning! But even still, a grade two True Meaning shouldn't be that terrifying, right?* The black-robed demon was escaping in a panic, his heart full of terror. *Wu Lang actually died from that single spear attack which followed him even after entering the void! My Dark Abyss Demigod robe was also pierced through? This, what exactly is this True Meaning? Could it be a grade one True Meaning? If that's the case, then I have no grievances over dying!*

Grade one True Meaning.

Such a thing was legendary amongst the legendary! Even with so many outrageous abilities, the Extreme Piercing Xue Ying possessed was merely a single aspect of the grade one True Meaning of Extremity! If he actually displayed the Piercing after grasping hold of the True Meaning of Extremity, the current Xue Ying would have been even more terrifying. Previously, Xue Ying had fused the Profound Mystery of Earth into the Extreme Piercing that had been created using water, fire and wind to increase its might by three times.

Thus, it could be said that there was still room for improvement in the Extreme Piercing.

This Piercing was merely an aspect of the complete True Meaning of Extremity! There were still many other aspects! Yet it was simply too difficult of a task to comprehend it. Supposedly known as the final destination of everything and the origin of everything, trying to grasp hold of this True Meaning of Extremity... was also a legend in countless worlds!

Of course—

Amongst the many grade two True Meanings, the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing was an entirely offensive True Meaning, and indeed, it was terrifying in this aspect! However, one could not look down on any other grade two True Meaning. Every one of them had their own unique traits!

“You still want to escape?” Xue Ying’s voice resounded suddenly.

The black-robed demon turned around, only to see Xue Ying appearing behind him. The savage look on his face contorted in terror. This terror had long seeped into his heart and mind.

*Chi!*

With just a thrust of the spear, the black-robed demon’s body immediately shattered.

Xue Ying once again stood calmly in mid-air. Once the particles fully recovered, he would once again stabbed out!

Every stab had killing intent and fury imbued in it.

*Sister Ling Shu, brother Zong Tu, senior brother Ba Ming, I've finally brought justice for you all!* Xue Ying was boiling up over the memories he had of his friends, causing his eyes to moisten. These close friends of his had all been assassinated. These rank five demons whom he just killed were those located in the five northern provinces. Other than sister Ling Shu and the other two, there were still many other good friends whom he had drank together with.

Even though his feelings with sister Ling Shu did not reach an intimate stage, those times when they drank wine, chatted and laughed together were etched into his heart. The memory of a Transcendent... was powerful enough to allow Xue Ying to clearly recall every single word he spoke with all of them, and the expressions they had during those times.

*My Xia Clan will never forget your contributions.* After the final spear attack, the black-robed demon's body disappeared completely, never again to recover!

.....

*Si La—*

The space membrane was torn apart, allowing a black-robed teenager to step into the chaotic void in between space. Si Kong Yang, Chi Qiu Bai and Mountain Lord He came rushing over.

"How was it; were you discovered?" Chi Qiu Bai immediately asked. If he had been revealed to the Demon Army, then the other four bases would have retreated by now.

---

## Chapter 49 – The Joy of Success

---

“I don’t think I’ve been discovered,” Xue Ying said.

“You aren’t sure?” Chi Qiu Bai, Si Kong Yang, and Mountain Lord He all hesitated.

Xue Ying explained, “I killed the weaker demons as soon as I arrived. However, there were still three rank four demons and two other rank five demons who survived! I was only able to kill them off after engaging in close combat. I’m not sure... if this Heart-Linking Demon was one of the rank five demons. If he was amongst them, then I’m afraid I may have been discovered!”

“Haha... if my memory serves me right, all of the Heart-Linking Demons are extremely pitiful. They suffered from a cruel method of secret cultivation, causing large amounts of them to die! There were only a few who managed to survive!” Chi Qiu Bai laughed. “They couldn’t survive even when taking into account their extremely formidable life force, since the secret cultivation method actually targets the soul! The souls of many demons failed to withstand it and therefore immediately dissipated. Even if it succeeded, their souls would be left with large amounts of secret imprints. In other words—their souls turn into a sort of communication equipment! The moment they unleash the secret imprints on their souls, they are immediately able to communicate across worlds!”

“Even when they succeed in creating this communication equipment, their souls would still incur terrible injuries,” Chi Qiu Bai continued. “Thus, it is extremely difficult for them to cultivate!”

“Mn.” Mountain Lord He also smiled. “Heart-Linking Demons are definitely rank one or two demons! For one to become a rank four or five demon, the

probability... would be one in a million! The chances of you having been discovered are extremely low, and even if you were, we can only blame our luck for being bad!”

Si Kong Yang patted Xue Ying on the shoulder. “Xue Ying, good job!”

Currently, Si Kong Yang’s mood was exuberant and complex at the same time.

Back then, he had actually been furious over Xue Ying’s choice of cultivation for being so self-centered, his care and concern changing into anger! Yet more than ten years had passed since his success in the Mountain Road mission, which revealed that the mistake was on him. Currently, Xue Ying could directly destroy a demon base situated in a minor Transcendent World. Whether he had been discovered or not, the largest threat brought onto the Transcendents of Xia Clan had finally been removed!

Even if he was discovered, the Demon Army would still command all the demons in the elite teams of the other four bases to retreat.

“It wasn’t much,” Xue Ying said. “I’ve merely used a little bit of my time to battle with them. Sister Ling Shu and many others have instead paid the price of their lives!”

Chi Qiu Bai, Si Kong Yang and Mountain Lord He became silent.

These past few years, the number of Xia Clan Transcendents who died had become twice as large when compared to the start of the war! Whether they came from Mountain Lord He’s Black White Deity Mountain or Si Kong Yang’s Water Daoist Faction, there had been many Transcendents who died. And most of them were people they were familiar with.

“That’s why I’ve always been proud of my Xia Clan,” Mountain Lord He started. In the past, he always had a light-hearted and detached demeanour, yet right now, his eyes were bright and full of sharpness. “It’s precisely the willingness of these Transcendents to sacrifice for the Xia Clan that allowed our Xia Clan to become the master of this mortal world! If not for the generations after generations of Transcendents battling fiercely, if not for the ancestors of our Xia Clan who sent back treasures to their homeland, our Xia Clan wouldn’t have lasted for so long.”

“Mn.”

Xue Ying nodded. These past few years, he would always feel a stab in his heart whenever he heard news of a Transcendent dying in battle! But that led to a qualitative change in his heart, allowing him to appreciate more of what he had currently. That made him understand how the Xia Clan managed to last until today—it was thanks to the contributions of their ancestors, some of which even paid the clan with their lives! Without these contributions by their ancestors, the Xia Clan would have been destroyed! And frighteningly, he might have not even been born.

“Quickly, let’s continue the mission!” Si Kong Yang requested. “The faster we do this, the better. As soon as a member of the Demon Army tries communicating with the demons in any of the minor Transcendent Worlds and nobody replies, we will be discovered!”

“Mn.” Xue Ying and the others nodded.

Every base he destroyed meant a team of elite demons being killed.

Rank five demons were rarely found, so missing this opportunity meant they would lose their chance of annihilating large amounts of them in the future.

“Go, let’s continue to the next base.”

*Hu.*

The four of them continued their journey through the void layer in between space.

.....

Back in the Infernal Palace, Palace Head Chen was currently standing outside his study room by himself. Nobody in the Infernal Palace knew of how nervous he currently was.

Palace Head Chen was solemnly waiting for news—news of the mission’s result!

He was afraid...

That Xue Ying’s attack would fail! After all, even with a huge chance of success, one would still be anxious deep in their heart until hearing the end result!

*You must succeed, you must succeed in destroying the arrays of these demons. Palace Head Chen was praying expectantly. You must not fail. The moment you fail, our Transcendents will face even more attacks by the Demonic Avatars of the rank five demons.*

Every second felt really hard to get through.

Sweat was forming on Palace Head Chen's forehead, for the life and death of half of his Xia Clan's Transcendents was dependent on this mission!

Suddenly, a message was transmitted over.

"Success! The first demon base has been destroyed!" It was Xue Ying who transmitted the message.

Palace Head Chen was stunned for a moment before elation overcame him.

"Success, it's a success! Hahaha! That's good, very good! I knew that Dong Bo Xue Ying would not disappoint me." Palace Head Chen was extremely excited.

After that, more messages arrived through the transmission.

"Old Chen, Xue Ying succeeded! And he killed all those weak demons immediately after entering. I think the Demon Army has no knowledge of this!"

"Dong Bo Xue Ying has successfully destroyed the first demon base without being discovered."

"Success, Xue Ying is really capable. Palace Head, I think we have not been discovered by them. Preparing now to head to the second base."

The messages by Si Kong Yang and the other two made Palace Head Chen even more excited.

"It seems that Xue Ying's first proposal was a success!" Palace Head Chen was exuberant. Before this mission, he had prepared with Xue Ying, listening to his plan of how he was going to kill the demons. The very first proposal was hopefully managing to exterminate all the weaker demons as soon as he landed in order to prevent any information from leaking out. If the array was too formidable for him to enter, he would use the back-up plan—to attack directly and destroy the arrays! By then, he would certainly be revealed.

"Very good, it's good that he wasn't discovered. Kill, the more demons you kill,



the better!” Palace Head Chen’s eyes were filled with killing intent. “All these damnable demons who dared to invade our Xia Clan’s world should be annihilated without remorse!”

\*\*\*\*\*

The entire Xia Clan World was extremely quiet and peaceful.

Even though the demons would occasionally attack some small places, their influence on the bigger picture of the entire Xia Clan was minute! The countless mortals continued their peaceful days, some moving continuously about, others cultivating diligently, crying for love or living in seclusion for the sake of revenge or even due to an ambitious heart... all these mortals had their own methods of living.

But as they continued with their lives, they did not know that behind this world, in that very moment—

There was a Transcendent called Dong Bo Xue Ying and three other Demigods of the Xia Clan attacking the bases of the demons!

Because of this successful attack...

Many Transcendents would be able to survive, and the lives of those demons for the next thousand years or more would become much more miserable. The extent of their rampant actions would also be reduced drastically, allowing billions of mortals to survive in the future!

.....

In one of the minor Transcendent Worlds.

A team of powerful elite demons were currently living in a demon palace situated within.

And their commander was none other than the strongest rank five demon amongst those who invaded the world—Demon Ji Er Luo!

---

# Chapter 50 – Temporal Temple

---

Deep within the recesses of a vast demon palace, there was an extravagant hall with its doors closed shut.

On the floor of that hall, a demon with golden armour was sitting cross legged.. His golden armour covered the crimson scales underneath. He was also wearing golden sabatons! Eyes closed, he was glowing dimly in blood-coloured light. He had a crimson horn on his forehead with an unmatched sharpness that seemed like it could even pierce the heavens. At that moment, he was quietly cultivating in the hall. Other than him, there were two other rank four demons waiting for his orders. These two demons didn't dare make any noise at all.

After all, the status of Ji Er Luo was so high that even Demon Generals would adopt an equal position when communicating with him.

He was someone who comprehended two different grade three True Meanings!

And one of them had actually reached the stage two realm! Thus, it was almost certain that as long as he spent a little bit of his time, he would certainly become a Demigod! Furthermore, with his talent, he would certainly be able to match the might of other Demon Generals the moment he became a Demigod! As soon as one of his True Meanings reached the stage three realm, he would become the strongest amongst all the Demon Generals.

After all, there was a huge difference between grasping hold of a single grade three True Meaning and two separate grade three True Meanings!

As long as he had time, he would most certainly become an existence standing at the peak of all the Demon Generals! Naturally, his status was unique, with

even other rank five demons having to treat him respectfully. At that very moment, he held a combat power that could match other Demigods!

Ji Er Luo opened his blood-red eyes which had a terrifying killing intent imbued within. He stood up.

“How boring it is for me to stay in this minor Transcendent World.” Ji Er Luo impatiently swept across this empty hall with his gaze.

He understood why they were there.

The five Demon Generals requested for him to wait in this minor Transcendent World, fearing that he might get killed by one of the Demigods of the Xia Clan in the mortal world! After all, the demons were considered to be at a disadvantage in this war, which meant they had to treasure every single power they held. Ji Er Luo was definitely going to become a Demon General in about 100 to 200 years; thus, it was safer for him to remain in the minor Transcendent World.

.....

At a distance of about 2.5 kilometers away from Ji Er Luo, within another ordinary hall in the Demon Palace, there were currently no demons inside.

Since the Demon Palace, which covered a distance of 50 kilometers, only had a total of ten demons, there were naturally plenty of empty spaces.

*Weng~*

A mystical mighty power descended.

Even though the space in this location was sealed by their arrays, in front of this mighty, mystical power, those supposedly mighty demon arrays were just like ants in front of a Deity. The gap between them was so immense that it was hard to imagine. Nothing the latter did could affect this power at all.

Suddenly, five different figures appeared.

“There’s actually a rookie? That’s so troublesome! Adding a rookie to this already very difficult mission...!” A figure with a body seemingly made up of black metal glanced at the corner of the hall before sending a sound transmission over to a handsome teenager by the side. “Big brother, should we get rid of him first? Our current mission is already so dangerous. I’m afraid that this rookie who

doesn't know anything might impede our movements. Even though getting rid of him might cause the shrine to incur punishments on us, that's something we can accept!"

At the same time, the other two partners received his sound transmission.

"This rookie seems quite handsome. I feel quite unwilling to do it." An extremely beautiful girl licked her scarlet lips.

"I disagree!" The red-robed female transmitted. "The mission is extremely dangerous! This rookie was actually sent over via the Temporal Temple to join our team, thus ensuring that his combat power should be quite formidable. As long as we utilise him well enough, he will be a boon to us! You all should understand... if we aren't careful enough, more than half of us will die right here."

"Big brother, what's your opinion on this?" The male with the figure seemingly made of black metal looked towards the handsome teenager.

"After he appeared, this rookie didn't panic and has only been calmly observing us. With such composure... I think that he should join our team temporarily," the handsome teenager replied.

This small team soon arrived at a decision.

Only now did that handsome teenager start smiling. "You can call me Lie Huo. I trust that you have already received the information given to you by the Temporal Temple. That's right, you have been chosen by the Temporal Temple. From now on... you will be part of the Temporal Temple, journeying through the billions of worlds."

"Temporal Temple?" The rookie had long and narrow eyes. He was currently wearing purple robes. Grinning, he said, "I didn't know that I would be so fortunate that the Temporal Temple would forcibly take me here. From what I've heard, the members of the Temporal Temple may walk across the many worlds, including that of the Deity World and the Dark Abyss. But still, I don't feel really comfortable being chosen."

"Right now, time itself has been locked down. We have a period of time to make our preparations. During this time, we are definitely safe. Currently in our

location, time flows really quickly. The outer worlds could be considered to have come to a standstill by comparison!” The handsome teenager said, “Let’s cut the nonsense. Tell us your name or codename if you must first!”

“Name? Even if I was chosen by the Temporal Temple, my name is part of my past life. Anyway, you all can just call me... Sword Devil!” the purple-robed teenager said.

“Sword Devil?”

The handsome teenager nodded slightly. Usually, the members of the Temporal Temple would use codenames, very few of them ever use their real names. That was because of a certain legend that spoke of a powerful Devil who could use other people’s true names to discover information regarding them. Having walked through countless worlds, they had experienced many dangerous situations, thus making them even more alert—using a code name did not create much trouble for them.

“I won’t question your combat power,” the handsome teenager spoke candidly. “I doubt you will just honestly tell us all your methods. Since you have the qualifications to join us on this mission, your combat power is certainly powerful enough. When the time comes, just act when the opportunity is ripe. After all, you are a rookie without any Spacetime points. The moment we fail the mission, you will fall into hell and then have to undergo three punishment Hell rank missions in consecutive order! By then, you will have to succeed in all your missions. Upon failure or death, your soul will truly be extinguished!”

“I understand. I’ll definitely try my best to help you guys,” said the purple-robed teenager Sword Devil. “The current mission is of a Hard difficulty, but the one above it—Hell rank—is not something that I, as a rookie, want to try, and neither do I want to do it three times consecutively!”

The Hell rank missions had a death rate of 90%.

Doing it three times consecutively...

Just thinking about it, he could feel a chill settling in his heart.

“Very good,” the handsome teenager continued. “We’ll first tell you the fundamental situation of our current mission.”

“Mission difficulty, Hard! A difficulty below that of Hell rank. Under ordinary circumstances, half of us will die! However, we’ve already done our preparations. As long as we team up well enough, there’s certainly a chance of survival.”

“Mission target—Protect demon Ji Er Luo from the hands of Xia Clan Transcendent Dong Bo Xue Ying for a single day and send him in one piece into the Xia Clan’s mortal world!”

“Mission background: Rank five demon Ji Er Luo is in command of two rank five demons and other elite demons. They have built a demon base in the minor Transcendent World, sending their Demonic Avatars to assassinate Transcendents in the Xia Clan’s World. As for the Xia Clan’s Transcendent Dong Bo Xue Ying, he would kill his way independently into this minor Transcendent World, killing every single demon inside!”

The handsome teenager continued, “This mission might seem simple, but you must remember this. According to the description... Ji Er Luo is leading two other rank five demons! And combat power comes before anything else in the Dark Abyss! Ji Er Luo could lead two other rank five demons, showing that his combat power... must surpass that of any ordinary rank five demon. From my estimate, he should be able to match the might of a Demigod.”

“His combat power might even surpass that of any Transcendents who just recently had their breakthrough to the Demigod rank.” The beautiful girl at the side smiled. “I’ve lived in the Dark Abyss. Thus, I know that rank five demons are all extremely powerful. There are many who could reach the doorstep of a Demigod in combat power. For him to lead them? I’m afraid that there should be a gap between his power and that of other ordinary rank five demons!”

The handsome teenager nodded. “He is very powerful himself and has command of so many demons. He is also located in his own base. Even so, this mission of protecting him is of a hard difficulty... which means that this Transcendent of the Xia Clan called Dong Bo Xue Ying is extremely terrifying!”

---

# Chapter 51 – Teaming Up

---

“I’ve also received a tip regarding the mission this time around,” said the handsome teenager.

The purple-robed teenager Sword Devil listened attentively to what he had to say.

The members of the Temporal Temple traveled to millions of different worlds, facing different dangerous situations each time. Heading out on a mission without any tips would be like going in blind—completing it would be extremely difficult. As for those with high status and combat power, the Temporal Church did not wish for these members to die so easily. Instead, they groomed them, providing suggestions during their missions.

The fact that the Temporal Temple bothered to provide this handsome teenager with tips... represented that he was indeed someone extremely powerful!

“The tip provided this time is... that Xia Clan’s Transcendent Dong Bo Xue Ying has grasped hold of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing!” The handsome teenager revealed a grin. The name ‘Dong Bo Xue Ying’ arose from the heart, yet it had been the same as the name fixed by the Deity World.

“Extreme Piercing? Is it related to the legendary grade one True Meaning of Extremity?” asked the purple-robed teenager.

The black metal construct-like male beside him snorted. “Of course they are related! This Extreme Piercing is a branch of the True Meaning of Extremity! Not only that, it’s a grade two True Meaning that’s completely focused on attack power! If our big brother wasn’t here, I’m afraid that all of us would die during this mission! It’s impossible for us as Saint Transcendents to survive against the

True Meaning of Extreme Piercing.”

“Is it that formidable?” the purple-robed teenager Sword Devil asked, full of suspicions. “How formidable?”

He had never heard of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing before.

“Extreme Piercing is even faster than teleportation itself, so don’t try to use it to escape!” the black metal construct male coldly said. “It can easily destroy space and physical materials—they don’t even count as obstacles. It can pierce your body even if you’re wearing Demigod grade battle armor! That means that any defence is absolutely useless when faced with it! Furthermore, because it is a completely offensive True Meaning, the might of its attack power is much more formidable than any ordinary grade two True Meaning!”

“If we were to fight against him, it’s possible that this Dong Bo Xue Ying will just teleport in front of us and crush our bodies with a simple move! It’s useless even if we have an undying body. This sort of destruction happens on the most fundamental atomic level! Even an undying body can’t block more than several of his moves.” The black metal construct male looked towards the purple-robed teenager Sword Devil.

“This, this...” Sword Devil was stunned.

It was too frightening.

Grade two True Meanings were spoken of only in legends, and they were, of course, extremely terrifying! As for a grade two True Meaning that focused purely on offensive power, it was most certainly even more frightening!

The handsome teenager said, “We have already paid a price to prepare an array that will prevent this Transcendent of the Xia Clan from forcibly piercing through. If we do not stop his invasion... we’ll only be destroyed one by one. We’ve already planned every aspect of this mission, so when it’s time to carry it out, you should just act as opportunities arise! The time for preparation is ending soon, so Ji Er Luo should discover us any moment now.”

*Weng ~*

The surrounding time and space started producing waves. This area around them began joining with a zone in the external world via the confluence of time



and space.

.....

In the Demon Palace.

Ji Er Luo had a sudden change in expression. He could feel a powerful disturbance in a certain area of the Demon Palace.

“There are invaders!”

“Enemies incoming!”

“It must be a Xia Clan Transcendent!”

The ones who discovered the intruders were the two rank three demons tasked with monitoring the arrays covering the entire Demon Palace, as well as large areas outside of it.

The news was immediately transmitted to the Heart-Linking Demon.

A fat demon was currently eating and drinking as he liked, but upon receiving the news, he had a shock.

“Enemies?” The fat demon immediately operated his Demonic Energy to arouse the Secret Seal imprinted in his soul, *weng*—at that moment, the response from his soul rapidly rose in strength until it reached another Heart-Linking Demon beside the general. Without hesitation, he reported, “There’s a Xia Clan Transcendent attacking us!”

As soon as the Heart-Linking Demon’s report arrived—

*Hong! Hong! Hong!*

Ji Er Luo immediately turned into a stream of particles before rushing over to the origin of that wave disturbance. A few kilometers away, he noticed the five presences standing on the plaza and the auras they emitted.

With a single gaze, he was shocked.

“Mn? Magic demon? There is even a member of the Metal Construct Clan?” Ji Er Luo discovered that amongst the five figures, one of them was actually a magic demon from the Dark Abyss. There was also a black metal construct male who was an extremely rare existence even amongst the millions of millions of

worlds—someone from the Metal Construct Clan.

Regardless, since they appeared in his base, Ji Er Luo did not hesitate in releasing his punch.

*Hong ~*

His fist was dazzling—countless golden particles of lights concentrated on it, causing a mysterious transformation! This single punch was given a terrifying destructive might that tore through all obstacles at a shocking speed. In a fleeting moment, it reached the five people. Such powerful might was certainly comparable to that of the Demigods!

“Ji Er Luo, don’t be so hasty. We aren’t your enemies!” A strange wave immediately transmitted into the mind of Ji Er Luo.

At the same time, that handsome teenager smiled and smashed out with his fist in return.

Black fiery Qi flew out from it, clashing directly with Ji Er Luo’s terrifying strike.

*Peng!*

The two mighty powers clashed, creating a shockwave that spread in all directions. The surface was shattered, and the walls of the surrounding halls started crumbling apart.

The handsome teenager received the bulk of the impact as he was too close, though he was only pushed back gently.

Ji Er Luo groaned. After falling backwards, he held onto his chest in pain. A trace of blood flowed down from the edge of his mouth. Shocked, he couldn’t help but stare in shock at that handsome teenager. Having attained the stage two realm of his True Meaning of Golden Brilliance, his body had become truly tyrannical. Any ordinary rank five demon would be unable to cause him any injuries no matter how they attacked his body.

Yet just a simple exchange had caused him injuries? Of course, his undying body allowed him to recover immediately. This sort of injury did not concern him too much.

“Kill!” After this brief exchange of moves, the other two rank five demons and

the many more demons immediately came charging over.

“Hmph!” The red-robed female who was standing beside the handsome teenager snorted. At that moment, a mighty spell appeared along with an endless amount of World Energy. The other demons could control the World Energy as well, but they could not compete against this red-robed female. In the blink of an eye, red lotuses began blooming across the palace which occupied a total area of 50 kilometers. These red lotuses abruptly bound the incoming demons.

In a single moment.

The two rank five demons and all the other demons had been bound by the red lotuses, unable to even struggle to get free.

“So formidable!” Ji Er Luo had a slight change in expression seeing the scene in front of him. That red-robed female was a Transcendent mage! And a terrifying one at that. Her combat power should not be any weaker than his!

“If we were to act, Ji Er Luo, you might be able to struggle for a move or two. But I’m afraid that all your underlings will be dead by then.” The handsome male smiled before extending his arms, revealing a shiny forearm. On a small part of the skin, there was a mystical pattern that could cause anybody to feel as if they were sinking into an endless space-time whirlpool.

“Temporal Temple?” Ji Er Luo was stunned. “You guys are the Reincarnators of the Temporal Temple?” His hostility had dropped drastically.

In the countless worlds, including the Dark Abyss and the Deity World...

There existed several superpowers!

For instance, the Temporal Temple, or the Bloodshed Tavern. The existences backing these organisations were the strongest in all of the worlds.

Backing the Temporal Temple was an existence believed to be the strongest in the control of time and space! Even the laws of the material worlds could not restrict the existence of time and space. That was why he could grasp hold of countless people and train them. He would eliminate the weak. He would also prepare several valuable cultivation methods and a good training environment for them.

Those who were chosen were called Reincarnators for the single fact that all of their missions had a high risk of them dying. Some of these missions would see only one living out of ten! Thus, every single mission was akin to a reincarnation, which led to their naming as such.

This sort of selective process...

Naturally allowed the Temporal Temple to become the peak superpower amongst countless of worlds!

Actually, other than the Temporal Temple and the Bloodshed Tavern that had comparable power, there were also several other powerful organisations... which had their own unique, terrifying aspects.

However!

In the mortal worlds, these other superpowers were greatly disadvantaged. These mortal worlds were considered as material worlds, and Deities were unable to descend into them. Depending on their World Projections? That would be too weak! Their Doppelgangers? The price paid would be too great! Even sending several treasures into the mortal worlds was too difficult a task.

As for the Temporal Temple, they could instead easily enter any of the mortal worlds...

Of course, under the tacit understanding amongst the organisations, the Temporal Temple was forbidden from building their own Deity Temples in the countless mortal worlds! Also, the Bloodshed Tavern might have their branches in various mortal worlds, but they were forbidden from spreading their religion!

“Since you guys are part of the Temporal Temple’s Reincarnators, what are you even barging in here for?” Ji Er Luo frowned. The Temporal Temple’s Reincarnators undertook missions for the sake of filtering them out via life and death situations. Sometimes, they would help a faction. At other times, they would help the opposing faction. There were even situations when the Reincarnators were assigned to help two different, opposing factions.

“To help you, of course!” The handsome teenager sneered. “You can’t understand that even now? If we wanted to act, we would have already acted long ago! You should understand that you aren’t our match!”

Ji Er Luo had a change in expression before he nodded slightly. "I believe you. But help me? What do I need your help for?"

"Hong Ye, is the array fixed in place?" The handsome teenager looked towards the red-robed female. She had a combat power similar to his, and he trusted her the most.

"The array to prevent Extreme Piercing from entering has been set," the red-robed female replied. Borrowing the reach of the red lotuses all around the Demon Palace, she had long since started setting up the array secretly. "The other arrays still need some more time."

"Quickly. Dong Bo Xue Ying is going to reach here soon," the handsome teenager urged.

"Dong Bo Xue Ying?" Ji Er Luo had some uncertainty. "Do you mean the Xia Clan Transcendent, Dong Bo Xue Ying?"

"That's him." The handsome teenager nodded.

"But he has at most the combat power of a rank five demon, is he really coming over?" Ji Er Luo frowned.

.....

In the void layer between space.

Xue Ying, Chi Qiu Bai, Mountain Lord He and Si Kong Yang penetrated through the void before arriving outside the membrane of a Minor Transcendent World.

"This is the third world." Xue Ying looked ahead at the vast world membrane. He had just swept through the second demon base not long ago, and everything had gone according to plan. Even though a rank five demon had wanted to escape by tearing through space itself, the corresponding area outside the world had been guarded by Chi Qiu Bai and the other three Demigods, so he had walked right into their trap!

"I'll be entering now." Xue Ying smiled before tearing through the world membrane.

"Be careful," Chi Qiu Bai reminded. "Don't be too careless because of how smoothly the last few missions have gone."

“I understand.” Xue Ying took a step, entering the Minor Transcendent World and disappearing from the vision of the three Demigods.

---

## Chapter 52 – Attack!

---

In a desert.

Xue Ying walked out from a crack in space. He closed his eyes and continuously swept the area outside his domain using his enhanced senses endowed by the True Meaning of Star...

*It's about 3,000 kilometers away!* Xue Ying thought as he immediately determined the location. The space within that area was sealed, and he was able to detect a dead zone.

At the same time, the Qi Avatar in Snowrock Castle immediately transmitted news of the location over to Chi Qiu Bai, Si Kong Yang and Mountain Lord He who were located in the void layer in between space. They immediately rushed over to the corresponding void position where the demon base was located and stood guard.

*Sou!*

Xue Ying immediately went underground and rushed towards his destination with great speed.

To the current Xue Ying, a distance of 3,000 kilometers was not even worth mentioning. Considering the great speed he had while travelling underground, as well as the improved control over earth granted by the True Meaning of Star, any subterranean obstacle stopped being an issue for him. In fact, they served to augment his speed.

*I've arrived!*

The stream of light travelling underground turned back into a black-robed

teenager.

*Mn?* Xue Ying carefully sensed the space of his destination ahead of time using his True Meaning of Extreme Piercing and discovered some extremely powerful obstacles sealing the area. They initially did not concern him very much, but soon, his expression changed. *What is going on? Why is there such a mighty power within?*

There were seven different powers fused together like ropes intertwining, making the space tough and impenetrable.

Even he could not penetrate through it!

*How can there be such an array? In the previous two demon bases I've been to, they did not have such arrays.* Xue Ying frowned. *And furthermore, the Demon Army shouldn't have many uses for arrays like these when engaging in war.*

Xue Ying had a feeling that he was being led into a trap.

*Weng ~*

A wave suddenly emitted outwards from the Demon Palace, into the sky and deep underground. Naturally, it passed through Xue Ying's position.

*I've been discovered?* Xue Ying was calm. *That's strange. I've actually been discovered in advance. Furthermore, this array setup is targeted at my Extreme Piercing?*

*Since I'm unable to penetrate through it, I'll suppress it directly instead!*

*Sou sou!*

His figure flashed twice, teleporting up towards the surface.

The desolate surface was littered with weeds. The area ahead of Xue Ying was thickly shrouded by a black fog. The demon palace that occupied an area of 50 kilometers in radius was at times visible and at other times hidden. After all, a mighty, invisible power surrounded the demon palace. It was precisely this force that prevented Xue Ying from forcibly penetrating into the array.

"I've been discovered in advance. Furthermore, there is an array that specifically inhibits my Piercing," Xue Ying immediately transmitted the message



to Palace Head Chen, Chi Qiu Bai and the others. “There is something amiss, but as I’ve been discovered anyway, I’ll just attack them directly!”

“There is an array meant to restrain you?”

“After we exterminated the previous two demon bases, we immediately rushed over to this location. Even if they were to send over arrays meant to restrain you, I doubt it would have happened so quickly!”

“How could this be?”

“Unless, it’s because this demon base is more unique?”

All of them had deep-seated suspicions.

“Xue Ying, you must be careful. Your safety comes first. We’ve already finished most of the missions. Killing a few more demons is just a small matter!” Palace Head Chen finally reminded him. Chi Qiu Bai and the others also agreed. Right now, they were unable to provide any help. Within the minor Transcendent World, Xue Ying had to depend solely on himself. “Since you’ve been discovered, I’ll immediately send over several Demigods to help you!”

After a brief exchange.

A group of Demigods were standing guard outside the palace, but Xue Ying was not worried about them; he knew that his true targets were inside the demon base in front of him.

*Since I’ve been discovered, I have no reason to rush into action. First, I’ll have to probe deeply and understand the situation before acting.* Xue Ying used the True Meaning of Star to carefully investigate the 50 kilometers area around him.

.....

“What?! The Xia Clan’s Transcendents are attacking, and the Temporal Temple has sent over people to protect you all?”

The five Demon Generals received the information from Ji Er Luo, giving them all a shock.

The Temporal Temple could pry into space-time to understand what had happened in the past. One must know that the past could never be tampered with. It was only the future that had not been set in place! Thus, any matter

which occurred in the millions and millions of worlds... could be uncovered as long as the Temporal Temple was willing to investigate! Since they were willing to arrange this mission for them, the Temporal Temple naturally affirmed... that the Xia Clan's Transcendents had an absolute advantage in this war!

They immediately contacted the other demon bases.

"No replies here."

"There are two bases that have not replied, meaning the Transcendents have already quietly exterminated them."

The results of this probe shocked them.

They had dispatched a total of five teams into five different minor Transcendent Worlds! Furthermore, each team contained three rank five demons as well as some arrays which the Demon Army brought with them! Yet the Saint Transcendents of the Xia Clan were actually able to destroy two of the demon bases without leaving the Heart-Linking demons with any time to transmit any information? That was absolutely terrifying!

"Escape, escape, quickly escape!" the five Demon Generals immediately ordered.

Two teams of demons acknowledged the order and began to retreat. With the large size of minor Transcendent Worlds and only a few Demigods available to the Xia Clan, it was impossible to completely seal a single minor Transcendent World. Chi Qiu Bai could only follow the information provided by Xue Ying and stand guard in the void layer at the corresponding locations of the demon bases.

When chased by Xue Ying, the demons were all escaping in a panic, allowing the Demigods to wait for the right opportunity to kill them.

Without Xue Ying chasing after them, the demons could casually break through any location in the minor Transcendent World before leaving it. There was no way to seal all the exits!

Furthermore!

Among the Xia Clan Demigods, there were also some who belonged to the Demonic Faction. This was the reason behind their mission's secretive nature!

Even Si Kong Yang and the other two did not know of their mission until the very last moment. If they were to openly inform all the Demigods, the Demonic Faction would certainly become aware of it, and the demons would have long escaped.

“I have no chance of escaping. Dong Bo Xue Ying has arrived! He is already outside the array! His attention is currently fixed on us, and he is not in a hurry to act.” Ji Er Luo was standing beside the Heart-Linking demon which was borrowing the Demonic Energy to form a projection of the five Demon Generals.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying? When you said that the Transcendents of the Xia Clan are invading your base, you were talking about Dong Bo Xue Ying alone?” The five Demon Generals were startled. “Are there no other Xia Clan Transcendents?”

“Nobody else. According to the Temporal Temple, Xue Ying had been attacking the bases just by himself! ” Even though in his heart Ji Er Luo could not accept this, the fact remained. “The overall combat power of the Temporal Temple’s Reincarnators is much greater than ours. Yet even so, it remains an extremely dangerous task for them to face Dong Bo Xue Ying.”

“He has already started attacking!” Ji Er Luo immediately said. “I’ve run out of time to say any more.”

The five Demon Generals were feeling anxious and helpless.

They could not do anything.

They would never fight their way over foolishly. Ultimately, selfishness, cruelty, and a cunning nature were a demon’s inborn traits! From what they could infer, the Xia Clan’s Demigods would be waiting outside the minor Transcendent World. If that was the case, why would they purposely seek death?

.....

After observing the situation for a moment, he was unable to glean any new information.

*Whatever. Time to begin!* Xue Ying stood in place. He extended his right hand, pointing his forefinger towards that black fog covering the Demon Palace.

*Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!* Strands and strands of Qi began flying out from the tips of his

two fingers.

Every single strand of Qi was imbued with the power of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, clashing against the arrays ahead of him. *Hong hong hong ~* Every single strand had an attack power comparable to a Demigod's. Furthermore, the Laws of Profound Mysteries were extremely frightening as they caused destruction on the deepest level. Its efficiency was so great that anyone watching would be alarmed. Under this attack, the energy of the arrays was being consumed rapidly.

*Xiu xiu xiu!*

Xue Ying was simply standing there, using only his two fingers to shoot out strand after strand of Transcendent Qi. He was prepared to use this move to destroy the arrays!

---

## Chapter 53 – Shocking! (I)

---

As the attack against the arrays continued, Palace Head Chen dispatched another three Demigods to help out Chi Qiu Bai and the rest.

How many Demigods did the Xia Clan have?

By this point, it was extremely hard to keep any information secret, and the intricacies behind their recent actions had already been revealed to the Demon Generals! Since there was no longer any reason to keep their forces secret, Palace Head Chen had openly dispatched City Lord Bu as the commander of two other Demigods.

“What? Xue Ying has grasped hold of a grade two True Meaning?”

On a fancy ship, the bald, thin old man Chao Qing was initially happily drinking his wine while being entertained by beautiful female dancers. Of course, he had borrowed World Energy to envelop an area of 500 kilometers in radius around him to observe his surroundings for traces of demons. But after receiving Si Kong Yang’s sound transmission, he was left with an expression of disbelief.

“This, this boy grasped hold of a grade two True Meaning? Are you joking with me?” Old man Chao Qing continued questioning, “There weren’t even any news previously about him grasping hold of the embryonic form of a grade two True Meaning, and now you suddenly tell me that he has grasped hold of a complete one?”

“Old brother Chao, how could I joke about such matters. Actually, back when he was in the Scarlet Cloud Mountain World, Xue Ying had already grasped hold of the embryonic form of a grade two True Meaning. But, as you know... the impact of this matter is too huge! In our entire history, there has been only one other person with such an achievement. The moment this news reached the ears

of the Demonic Faction or Sorcerer Palace, they would definitely have paid any price to kill Xue Ying. That's why we did not dare to release this news to the public!"

"Right, what you guys did was indeed wise. But why did you only tell me about this now?" Old man Chao Qing asked.

"This time, Xue Ying has single-handedly killed his way into the minor Transcendent Worlds, destroying their bases from within. I'm sure you already know that the Abyss demons built a total of five bases in five different minor Transcendent Worlds. We have succeeded in destroying two of them, and we are currently assaulting the third! Unfortunately, some unforeseen circumstances have caused the matter to be revealed this time around, alerting the Demon Generals. As a result, we could no longer keep it a secret!"

"Haha, so that's why. Only because the Demon Generals learned of this matter was I, this old man, informed." Old man Chao Qing grinned.

The dancers and musicians on the fancy ship felt puzzled.

Why was the old man grinning to himself?

But since this old man was the one paying them for their work, they did not dare to ask.

"Ask Xue Ying to be more careful! Since this third demon base has some unforeseen circumstances, he must ensure his safety is kept as the highest priority," transmitted old man Chao Qing. "Right now, he is still quite young. In a few hundred years, I'm sure he will be able to sweep across everything under the heaven! Even if the other Demigods teamed up together, they would still not be his enemy. What Demon Generals, what Demonic Faction... none of them would be able to threaten him!"

Old man Chao Qing was spirited.

History showed that during the time of the first ancestor who had grasped hold of a grade two True Meaning, the Xia Clan had absolutely no enemies!

That was indeed to be expected.

Earth-shaking matters like the emergence of a Deity or a Demigod in a clan

would allow them to remain uncontested for an entire generation! In the past, when the Beast Clan had an emerging Deity, none of the other clans could compete with them; the Xia Clan could only hide within the Infernal World.

Transcendents! Deities! Through self cultivation, they could attain a combat power of an extremely terrifying level. They could even attain the strength to easily annihilate an entire race.

Right now, Xue Ying had just grasped hold of a grade two True Meaning, yet the sign of his outstanding prowess was already showing. He could single-handedly sweep through teams of powerful Abyss demons by himself!

He had no need to condense a True Deity Heart. The day his grade two True Meaning reached the stage three realm... would be the day he suppresses all other clans for an entire generation! He would have no enemies for an entire generation!

“This brat is really capable.” Old man Chao Qing continued grinning. There were other Demigods of the Xia Clan currently discussing this matter with him. Most of them had already known about it. Other than those from the Demonic Faction, the ordinary Demigods who treated the Xia Clan as their own were extremely excited and elated. After all, the emergence of such a power meant that their clan would dominate the world for an entire generation!

Having no enemy for an entire generation was truly something worth celebrating! It would enable the foundation of the Xia Clan to grow stronger, and their days would be more peaceful in the future.

*Back then, I could see that this brat was extraordinary. It seems my eyesight is still quite excellent.* Old man Chao Qing was quite pleased. He could feel himself getting older and weaker, but he still felt indignant upon seeing demons invade his world before his death!

The arrival of demons meant that large numbers of Transcendents would die as well as many mortals!

His heart ached!

Yet in the end, he was powerless. Even if he gave his utmost in killing the demons, he could not affect the final outcome by himself!

But the news he received today made old man Chao Qing feel jubilant. First and foremost was the fact that there would be no more demon bases. Those who were not killed would retreat, drastically reducing the number of future deaths for their Transcendents! Furthermore, with Xue Ying's growth, the Demon Generals would soon meet their demise!

"Extraordinary people will do extraordinary things. That time, he was even scolded and berated by Si Kong! I was afraid he would stumble, but who would have thought that this brat would remain calm and not let his heart be impacted at all. He continued down his own path! I estimate... that after that, he was soon able to grasp hold of the embryonic form for a grade two True Meaning." Chao Qing could deduce his conclusion from that. "Such a pity that this matter was concealed. Otherwise, I would've been able to see Si Kong's ugly expression."

Chao Qing continued laughing.

This day was the happiest day in the past thousand years of his life. Even though he would die soon, he was still able to witness the rise of a character destined to leave behind his name in the history of the Xia Clan! He would also see the future thousand years of prosperity in his Xia Clan!

.....

Not only Chao Qing, but many of the other Xia Clan Demigods were extremely jubilant. After all, there had not been any signs beforehand of such a matter!

They understood that the rise of Dong Bo Xue Ying represented a change in the war's final outcome!

Form their standpoint, the situation had initially been unstable, but now, they could foresee the rise of the Xia Clan's power and the complete suppression of the demons and the Demonic Faction.

Of course...

They had a sliver of worry remaining regarding the situation currently happening in the minor Transcendent World. After all, they had heard that some unforeseen circumstances appeared in this third demon base. However, they held absolute confidence in the grade two True Meaning, and they also felt that the attack this time... would at most go through some minor trouble. Xue Ying



shouldn't have to face any life-threatening danger.

\*\*\*\*\*

While they held great expectations for the future, the five Demon Generals were also anticipative. The Demonic Faction could only watch on furiously upon receiving this news.

The Xia Clan held absolute confidence towards Xue Ying.

Meanwhile, the five Demon Generals and Demonic Faction had their hopes placed on the Reincarnators of the Temporal Temple! The Reincarnators had walked upon millions and millions of worlds. Anyone part of this group could not be looked down upon, and they all could cause miracles. They believed that since the Temporal Temple had arranged this mission for them, they would have the combat power to complete it!

Hope.

Each side was hoping that the outcome of the battle would be favorable for themselves.

The minor Transcendent Worlds allowed at most Saints to enter. But to dispatch several Saints over? Even if they were to send more rank five demons, it would be pointless. In other words, since the Xia Clan Demigods were guarding the middle layer outside the world, sending rank five demons over was the same as sending them to their deaths.

.....

In the minor Transcendent World.

*Hong hong hong...* More than half of the arrays protecting the demon palace had been destroyed, and the remaining ones were also being decimated at a rapid pace.

---

## Chapter 54 – Shocking! (II)

---

“We can’t hold on any longer. The energy of the arrays are being rapidly consumed. When that happens, they will naturally break.” Ji Er Luo’s bloodied eyes were full of panic. “By then, we can only battle directly!”

These types of arrays could be maintained through the energy supply of demons or mages at the Demigod level! But within this minor Transcendent World, there were no Demigods at all. Ji Er Luo and the team of Reincarnators from the Temporal Temple might have had a deep comprehension of the realms, but their current power had yet to reach the Demigod realm! Thus, they could not supply energy to this array.

Although the team from the Temporal Temple had brought some treasures along, they still had their own plans, and they weren’t willing to waste those treasures on an array that was destined to break.

After all, using those treasures would only serve to delay the inevitable.

“There’s no point in spouting such nonsense. You should borrow this opportunity to clearly determine the true combat power of that Transcendent of Xia Clan, Dong Bo Xue Ying!” the handsome teenager Lie Huo said coldly. “That way, when we truly battle, we’ll be better prepared!”

Ji Er Luo did not argue anymore. He observed the situation outside.

Every single strand of Qi that shot out from Xue Ying’s finger would make his heart tremble. In terms of power, every single strand was comparable to one of his own. But the Laws of Profound Mysteries in those attacks were clearly more mysterious.

*I comprehended the True Meaning of Golden Brilliance by watching two powerful Demonic Gods when I was still weak. That was how I walked all the*

*way until today. Ji Er Luo gritted his teeth, feeling that the situation was unjust. But he has been living as a human in the mortal world for his entire life. I doubt he was able to see battles occurring on the Deity level. Yet, he was able comprehend a True Meaning that is even greater than mine?"*

When Ji Er Luo was really young, he had struggled whilst at death door in the endless blood-filled plains, fearing that he might get killed and eaten by other demons!

But one day...

Two frightening Demonic Gods began fighting!

The battle scene was truly frightening. Their might affected an immense area, with countless demons dying as a result.

As for Ji Er Luo, because he was located very very far away, he was under no risk of death and had only spurt out some blood as a result of that mighty power. At that time, he was watching the battle excitedly.

He saw a black-coloured sun!

That black sun had vague tints of many black bolts of lightning intertwining, causing it to exude an even more terrifying power!

That single battle scene... was something he could not forget in his entire life!

As he continued cultivating, he started comprehending that terrifying black sun, before finally, grasping hold of the True Meaning of Golden Brilliance which turned out to be a powerful grade three True Meaning! However, he was still quite a large distance away from that black sun. Thus, he continued trying to comprehend it, until he grasped hold of another grade three True Meaning, which was the True Meaning of Space Edge. He resolutely wanted to fuse this True Meaning within the Golden Brilliance.

He wanted to let his own True Meaning evolve so that he could draw close to that black sun!

*I had reference to draw from, yet he is just a human living in a mortal world... but, but...* Ji Er Luo felt unwilling to accept the truth. He understood that Xue Ying was much stronger than he was due to that True Meaning of Extreme

Piercing. The Profound Mysteries in that purely offensive penetrative force could make his heart tremble even when watching from afar!

And right now—

The team of Reincarnators felt complex emotions when watching this combat scene.

*I've walked through many different worlds and have been heavily groomed by the Temporal Temple! First, I've grasped hold of four different grade three True Meanings... before being able to evolve them and grasp hold of a grade two True Meaning.* The handsome teenager Lie Huo felt troubled. *How much have I experienced? I can even choose any Deity secret technique I want! Furthermore, I've also seen the battles of several powerful existences and experienced ascetic cultivation. I have been given pointers by those of the Deity level... and he? He is just a brat from the mortal world. What kind of miraculous encounter could he have had?*

Lie Huo was truly feeling complex in his heart.

He was helpless to it. Transcendents were different. There were some who could have a terrifying comprehending ability and concentration while cultivating.

In his experience of walking through the many worlds, he had heard of something mystical—

There was once a very ordinary Sky realm Reincarnator. This sort of Reincarnator was too common. He had no extraordinary performances when undertaking missions.

But during his fifth mission...

He had entered a mortal world. For the sake of hiding his identity to complete the mission, the brat actually disguised himself as a woodcutter! Furthermore, he had even gotten familiar with several local woodcutters. When the mission was about to be completed, there was an old woodcutter... who actually helped him regain his freedom! That's right, Reincarnators could still regain their freedom, though the price that had to be paid was extremely huge.

They had to participate in dangerous missions time after time. Even though

their combat power grew the more they survived, there were still many amongst them who wanted to regain their freedom even considering the enormous price.

Of course, for a Sky realm Reincarnator to regain his freedom, the price was equivalent to the entire life savings of a Demigod existence, which that old woodcutter could easily afford.

Furthermore—

After that Reincarnator regained his freedom, he continued cultivating with that old man. After 30 years, he had actually comprehended the grade one True Meaning of Splitting Heavens!

In other words, that old man was a truly terrifying existence, and a big character in the Deity World. That mortal world was under his complete control—it was his back garden! During their exchanges, this Deity World character was able to ascertain the immense potential within that Sky realm Transcendent, and furthermore, led him down an appropriate path.

One must know, finding a good disciple wasn't easy! Forcing the disciple to walk down a path, albeit the path of a grade one True Meaning, would not allow the disciple to reach the stage two realm in his comprehension of the realm of Myriad Existences!

That powerful Deity World existence had also been unable to find a disciple that would satisfy him for a long period of time.

Thus, for him to meet someone who resonated with his heart and who was walking down a similar path to his... he would certainly groom and help him regain his freedom.

.....

One ordinary Reincarnator spent just 30 years of time to grasp hold of a grade one True Meaning because his potential had been discovered accidentally by a big character in the Deity World. This had become a legendary story!

Thus, there was no point in being jealous of him.

Compared to him, this Transcendent of the Xia Clan, Xue Ying, did not have any powerful existences giving him pointers. Instead, he had slowly cultivated

bitterly in the mortal world right from the start, before grasping hold of the terrifying True Meaning of Extreme Piercing. Was there any use in envying him?

*He has grasped hold of a grade two True Meaning. I've also grasped hold of a grade two True Meaning! Furthermore, I've prepared myself fully for this battle. Maybe this poor genius Transcendent who came out of nowhere might just very well die by my hands,* he thought, furious. Of course, even though he looked forward to killing a genius, in his heart, he understood that since this mission was given a difficulty of 'hard,' this Xia Clan Transcendent, Xue Ying, was not that simple of a character.

If that was the case...

That made him even more envious of him! For the sake of grasping hold of a grade two True Meaning, he had spent an awfully long period of time. He had fused a total of four grade three True Meanings before finally succeeding. How old was Xue Ying? How much experience did he have?

*Hong hong hong—*

One of the arrays finally crumbled.

"Soon, the arrays will no longer be able to hold him back. He'll be arriving upon us." Ji Er Luo immediately looked towards the team of Reincarnators beside him. He was currently not commanding the other demons under him. "Do you have certainty?"

"Rest assured. We've already prepared three different plans! So what if it's a hard difficulty mission? He will die by our hands as well," the black metal construct male confidently replied.

"Shen Jiang." The handsome teenager Lie Huo frowned. "You shouldn't look down upon this Dong Bo Xue Ying. Everyone, prepare yourselves! Hong Ye, we'll require you to control the arrays."

"Rest assured." The red-robed female nodded slightly.

The handsome teenager also nodded. "First, we'll act according to the first plan. Let's hope everything goes smoothly so that we can kill him directly!"

"Mn." The other four teammates nodded.

*Hong~* Accompanying the sound of the arrays crumbling, whether it was the hearts of the demons or the Reincarnators, they all tightened! The Heart-Linking demon, who had long hidden himself at a distance, informed the Demon Generals in a timely manner. “General! The arrays have been broken through! Dong Bo Xue Ying has arrived!”

---

## Chapter 55 – Battle

---

Along with the array's destruction, Xue Ying moved closer to the Demon Palace. As he approached the demons inside the palace gradually became influenced by the Gravity Domain. Under its might, those demon experts were probed.

*Mn? There are humans? Xue Ying was surprised. How can there be humans inside the Demon Palace? That man made of black metal... he is not exactly human, nor is he a demon!*

These results tied a knot in Xue Ying's heart.

*I moved quite fast this time. Even if the demon generals were to send some assistance, they couldn't possibly have been this quick. Moreover, it's not possible for the Demon Generals to send human Transcendents.* Borrowing the Gravity Domain's might, Xue Ying carefully inspected the group consisting of a handsome young man, a red-robed female and a purple-robed young man.

There were just a handful of Transcendents in the Xia Clan, and the number of Saints among them was even lower. Xue Ying had met all of them before, and these three people were not part of them.

*Perhaps they are Temporal Temple Reincarnators?* pondered Xue Ying.

After reading numerous scrolls and records, he learnt one thing. If you were to meet with unknown people who were either powerful or should normally not be at that level in the Mortal World, you had to suspect that they were Temporal Temple Reincarnators! Although there were also other forces such as the Bloodshed Tavern or other big organizations comparable with Temporal Temple, it would be very difficult for any of them to send their forces to any Mortal World!



Only the people of the Temporal Temple were able to roam into various worlds, even to the Deity World and the Demon Abyss!

*Perhaps the Temporal Temple made a mission out of my attack on Ji Er Luo in order to give their followers a chance to temper themselves?* pondered Xue Ying.

*Gotta be careful!*

The presence of these strangers sent Xue Ying into alert.

*Sou!*

After the array completely collapsed, Xue Ying turned into a streak of light and flew past them.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying is coming!” The handsome youth looked at the stream, or, more precisely, towards a certain human Transcendent of the Xia Clan who was rushing over. He then passed his order, “Start the first plan!”

The demon Ji Er Luo, the red-robed female, the purple-robed youth, the charming succubus, the black metal man and all the other demons were grimly waiting.

“Activate the array!” The handsome youth sent the order.

“Commencing the activation!” The red-robed female didn’t dare to act with any shred of negligence. Although Xue Ying already destroyed the obstruction array, some array possessed no direct obstruction for him. Like space sealing or counter of extreme piercing, if Xue Ying flew into this kind of array, he could smoothly flew by.

A single moment after Xue Ying arrived near the Demon Palace, the surrounding area suddenly changed. A frightening blood colored force started to spread, dying the sky red and indicated that the array had activated!

*Hong!* Xue Ying immediately fell, hitting the ground of the plaza at the Demon Palace main gate. Without any hesitation, he immediately activated the Gravity Domain.

With Xue Ying as the center, the 50 kilometers of area around him were enveloped by a terrifying gravity in a perfect spherical shape.

The terrifying gravity not only caused the lofty Demon Palace to crumble into dust, it even started breaking down to its fundamental level. In front of the powerful gravity, this ordinary material was completely unable to resist. One could only see the space being twisted and the huge Demon Palace starting to explode, leaving nothing behind. It was hard to follow the sequence of destruction with the naked eye.

“No...” Not only were the vulnerable inner organs of the fat Heart-Linking Demon and other weak demons crushed, their scales also started to disintegrate as their bones fractured. Every part of their body completely crumbled.

Only the rank three and four demons were able to keep their bodies intact!

In just a short moment, only Ji Er Luo, three other rank five demons and another rank four demon remained.

*Peng! Peng! Peng!*

Many materials used to set up arrays started to collapsing. The gravity was too terrifying. Any material that didn't have a certain degree of stability was unable to maintain its form. These materials first raised into the air, filling it with a red color and then completely vanished, leaving nothing behind.

“Not good!” The succubus was surprised, her undying body also unable to resist.

“The arrays were broken?” The purple-robed Sword Devil who was in charge tensed up. He looked foolishly at the terrifying True Meaning of Gravity. Many of the arrays previously set up were broken, rendered them useless.

“Damn!” The handsome youth's complexion turned unsightly.

His heart sank as the gravity force draw closer.

Although they had prepared for Xue Ying and knew that he had grasped hold of True Meanings other than Extreme Piercing, they had never imagined that he would have also comprehended an area of effect True Meaning like the True Meaning of Gravity. This kind of True Meaning had a weak offensive and defensive powers, but it had a frightening influence over its surroundings.

*By the looks of that gravitational power, his True Meaning of Gravity almost*

*reached the stage two realm!* thought the handsome youth. Based on his experience and knowledge, he deduced that this gravitational might was a stage higher than an ordinary, newly grasped True Meaning of Gravity. He guessed that this was a stage one realm that only needs another step to break into the second.

What he didn't know was that this was actually the might of the Gravity Domain granted by the True Meaning of Star.

This was just like how the might of Xue Ying's Extreme Piercing surged dramatically once he grasped a hold of the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing.

The same principle applied with the True Meaning of Star. Xue Ying was able to use a Gravity Domain, which was even mightier than that of a pure True Meaning of Gravity. Similar True Meanings were able to complement one another, and once it had a breakthrough, it could then undergo a qualitative change.

It was common to find people with grade three True Meanings. In the current Xia Clan, Chi Qiu Bai and the Beast Clan's Great Elder had them.

In terms of grade two True Meaning, only Xue Ying and another personage throughout the entire history of the Xia Clan had been able to comprehend any.

As for grade one?

It had already become a legend that in the legendary Deity World, you would be able to find and cultivate good seedlings who were capable of to comprehending grade one True Meanings.

"True Meaning of Gravity? I really hate the True Meaning of Gravity!" The black metal man was being attracted toward Xue Ying even though he tried his hardest to resist and stand firmly on the ground.

"Shen Jiang, careful!" the handsome youth transmitted. "Just go to the side; take some distance away from the battle!"

"Okay." The black metal man was trying his best.

He was part of the Metal race. In their group, due to his tyrannical body combined with his True Meaning, he could be counted as one of the fiercest

warriors. His race also came with a drawback—the weight of his body! He could weigh hundreds of times more than a human of a similar build! This tyrannical body and his great strength usually made him a very fierce warrior.

But now? Because his body was too heavy, the gravitational force influenced him hundred times more than the others! How could he fight when it was already difficult for him just to maintain his figure?

After a single move, they were already in checkmate!

“Are you Temporal Temple people?” shouted Xue Ying. The handsome youth and the other five people slightly paled. From their expressions Xue Ying knew that his guess was right. “Able to resist until now... you all are indeed not mortals.”

He spoke while flying at high speed.

With help from the Gravity Domain, Xue Ying detected an array that disturbed his use of Extreme Piercing. The key point of the array consisted of four plates, which could also block space.

“He wants to break the array!” transmitted the red-robed female. If even one of the plates were to be broken, there would no longer be any way to restrict this Xia Clan’s Transcendent Extreme Piercing and its terrifying attack power!

“Start the second plan!” the handsome youth secretly commanded. He felt bitter in his heart.

The same way Xue Ying preferred to use his first plan to attack the Demon Palace...

The first plan was the ideal one with high efficiency. Their group was only equipped with five arrays, but four of them had already been broken with only one left intact. Their first plan had not even been fully deployed, yet it already failed.

“Roger that.” The red-robed female didn’t hesitate to immediately activate the array.

*Hong~ Hong~ Hong~*

Endless life force converged within an area of 5 kilometers around them. Nine

gigantic green vines bigger than Snowrock Mountain appeared and danced around. These vines also had numerous smaller vines on their surfaces. In a short moment, Xue Ying was surrounded by those vines, turning his surroundings dark. He was unable to see anything other than those vines surrounding and enveloping him.

---

## Chapter 56 – The Second Plan

---

Those nine gigantic vines appeared to be connecting with the world. Xue Ying's expression changed as the vines quickly enclosed him.

The vines seemed to be very strong, so it would spell trouble for Xue Ying if they were to coil around his body.

"Mages!" Xue Ying looked at the red-robed female that stood the farthest away. If equipped with powerful equipment and arrays, a powerful Transcendent Mage would become a threat for several Transcendent Knights of the same level.

"Repulse!" willed Xue Ying.

The gravitational force changed. The force which was originally attracting everything towards Xue Ying switch to the opposite direction.

*Hu~hu~hu~* Moving with high speed, the vines were under an enormous gravitational pressure due to their numbers and enormous size. The pressure not only made the vines unable to move closer, it even bent them backwards, as they were unable to resist the gravitational force.

"Hmph, when under my Gravity Domain, the larger the body is, the bigger the disadvantage it will face." Without reducing his speed, Xue Ying continued to fly towards another plate.

"The vines are unable to trap him due to his True Meaning of Gravity," the handsome youth, Lie Huo, quietly agreed. "Well, at least now Dong Bo Xue Ying will only dare to use repulsive force."

Although it was to be expected that this array would have limited efficacy, they had already laid it out, so it would have been a waste to not activate it.

*Weng~*

Another, more significant array, was activated.

It was an easy task for a powerful Transcendent mage to simultaneously activate and operate two arrays. Although the vine array had a significant role in their plan, it lost its importance due to the gravitational force, so the Reincarnators shifted their focus to the second array.

Out of thin air, numerous colorful light started shining. These lights moved like fish in the water, swimming around inside the 5 kilometers radius and making the surroundings look mesmerizing and magnificent.

“Spatial waves! Subdue!”

The handsome youth used his True Meaning to manipulate the colorful lights from a distance. The movements of these lights become more vigorous, and his power surged up, enabling the lights to be evenly matched up with Xue Ying’s Domain. Seeing the numerous lights manipulated by the True Meaning rushing forward towards him, Xue Ying’s expression changed slightly.

This many lights rushing forth?

The Transcendent Qi which enveloped Xue Ying suddenly erupted spreading in all directions while infused by the True Meaning of Star. But the colorful light moved like water. They dispersed whenever Xue Ying’s red colored qi attacked, receiving no damage, and then moved to attack again.

The colorful lights around Xue Ying rapidly increased. Due to their high speed, they almost seemed to be a flash skill. All the surrounding lights in a five kilometers radius gathered around Xue Ying and then completely wrapped around him.

“So vexing.” Xue Ying felt like a mortal covered by water. The True Meaning of Star had powerful defensive and offensive ability. Each of Xue Ying’s movements easily split the dense lights, but he was still surrounded by them. Although mortals were able to pass through water currents, they were still met with resistance. That was Xue Ying’s present condition.

Although he could easily split the lights, he was met with great resistance!

“He is already under my control. Kill him while his strength is weakened!” ordered Lie Huo expectantly.

His True Meaning was the grade two True Meaning of Space Ripple, a fusion of two grade three True Meanings—the True Meaning of Wave and the True Meaning of Heavenly Light.

“Die!” The succubus wielded a blood colored bow, releasing from it an arrow containing a fleeting scarlet-colored thread.

“Xia Clan Transcendent, die for me!” said the black metal man in the distance, not daring to come any closer. Instead, he took out a short spear, imbued it with his True Meaning, and threw it. Within their group, his True Meaning was the strongest.

“Die!” The handsome youth also attacked.

*Sou, sou, sou*, his fist attack formed a black flame qi that rapidly flew toward Xue Ying.

As Transcendent Knights, they were more adept in their close combat capabilities, when compared to their ranged ones. But they had no other way than to use this second plan which did not involve close combat. After all, they would have to face mortal danger if they were to move closer or come near him.

“Die!” The red robed female took out a dark blue scroll.

That was a high grade Demigod ranked spell scroll!

Transcendent mages had the greatest advantage during ranged combat. Moreover, the most important factor in this second plan was the Demigod ranked spell scroll.

*Hong!*

While looking at the disturbance of the World Energy within a hundred kilometers, eight disks appeared, one by one, out of thin air. They appeared to be made of ice with ultra sharp edges. *Xiu, xiu, xiu!* The eight disks flew toward Xue Ying at high speeds, cutting through everything in its way. Their power made Xue Ying’s expression change.

“Not good!” Xue Ying felt that he was being faced with mortal danger. He could ignore the other attacks but those ice disks contained the might of a high grade Demigod ranked spell. Those disks could cut his body apart the moment



they made contact with it.

The purple robed young Sword Devil stood at a distance together with Demon Ji Er Luo. Neither of them took part in the attack. One was a novice while the other was an expert in close combat. Neither of them were suitable for ranged assault.

.....

Lie Huo's attack arrived first. With a wave, his black flame qi rapidly moved for the kill, but Xue Ying easily blocked it with his spear. This kind of attack that was no different from Transcendent Qi was easy to block. One must know that the True Meaning of Star was also a grade two True Meaning like Extreme Piercing! The gravity power was just one part of it. This True Meaning served to make one's physique akin to a star, as hard to shake as a planet where every movement was full of power as a star flare.

Even under the True Meaning of Space Ripple's suppression, Xue Ying was still powerful. He only lost 20% of his might at most, far from the major suppression the Temporal Temple Reincarnator wished for.

The spear blocked the black flame qi easily, but then the great wave passed through the Stellar Fire-Cloud Spear. Even after getting weakened by the Spear, it could still make its way into Xue Ying's body. However, his True Meaning of Star protected body managed to forcibly block it.

"Damn, I'm afraid I might have been wounded had I not used my weapon to block it." Xue Ying immediately evaluated his opponent's attack. "He injured me from a distance?"

He knew how incredible the True Meaning of Star's defenses were. For his body to have sustained injuries...

"This colorful light suppression move is also being controlled by him!" Xue Ying glanced at the distant handsome youth. He immediately regarded him as the key opponent.

*Pu, pu!*

The Stellar Fire-Cloud Spear moved like thunder, blocking every attack. After each move, the arrow and the short spear flew past him.

*Hu! Hu! Hu!*

The spell formed a killing move that could even cut through space. Eight ice disks were flying rapidly from the eight cardinal points. Looking at their power made Xue Ying's heart quiver. If the handsome youth's ranged attack was capable of injuring him, how about these eight disks? It was entirely possible that the attack could cost him his life!

"So fast!" Not concerning himself with anything else, Xue Ying swiftly evaded. But the eight disks still encircled him in an attempt to kill him. The red-robed female had a high level of comprehension towards the Realm of Myriad Existences, comparable with a Demigod Mage and thus allowing her to easily cast the spell scroll.

"Block!" Xue Ying didn't dare to be even slightly careless as he focused all his attention on the eight disks. He swung his spear in an arch, trying to resist them.

*Peng!*

A clashing sound reverberated.

The Stellar Fire-Cloud Spear containing the True Meaning of Star clashed with one of the disks causing the disk to shatter and Xue Ying's hands to tremor. The tremor then spread all over his body. His body was being protected by his True Meaning as well as a Demigod grade robe, so this collision was no threat to him, but...

The other seven disks were already approaching.

That was the most frightening aspect of the spell—the eight disks were working together to encircle and attack him! Each of the discs possessed an equally great danger for him.

"Block, block it!" Xue Ying tried his hardest to defend. The spear moving at lightning speed looked like a mirage. Its rotation made it seem like a planet slowly revolving.

*Peng! Peng! Peng!*

After another clash, Xue Ying's heart was completely unsettled. He used all of his spearmanship to defend. One by one, the ice disks with sharpened edges

moved closer to him.

*Peng! Peng! Peng!* At the same time, other than the eight ice disks, the black flame qi was also bombarding him. He relied on his movements to dodge the black flame qi or just received it directly while his spear was focused on blocking the eight ice disks. He paid no attention to the other harmless attack.

The True Meaning of Star fully showed its famed defense while protecting Xue Ying's body as he was bombarded with the black flame qi. In addition, his body was also protected by a Demigod grade robe.

The last residual wave passed through his body, shocking his inner organs. He felt a slight taste of blood in his throat.

The seemingly slow rotation movement was actually as fast as lightning.

"Hu." Xue Ying relaxed a little. He had just completely blocked the eight ice disks. There were also 12 traces of black flame qi on his body. With only the sturdiness of his body to protect him, the wave managed to drill into him. Thankfully, the True Meaning of Star was powerful enough and with the addition of the Demigod grade robe, he had only sustained minor injuries and blood rushing to his mouth.

*Pu!* Fresh blood sprayed from Xue Ying's mouth. He felt elated. Just before, he was being besieged by those eight ice disks, but Xue Ying didn't dare to be careless just yet.

Those Temporal Temple Reincarnator really were powerful enough. Had his defense not been up to par, he would have already lost his life!

---

## Chapter 57 – Fantasy?

---

“Kill!”

Having fallen into such a predicament, Xue Ying no longer dared hesitate. He immediately charged to the closest plate! As long as he destroyed this plate, he would be able to utilize the Extreme Piercing to appear in any spot within a radius of 50 kilometers, allowing him to attack them one by one! By then, the team of Reincarnators would no longer be unable to surround him.

“The second plan has failed. Commence the third plan! We go all in!” The handsome teenager’s expression turned sinister.

“All in!” Even though the black metal construct male was moving quite slowly under the repulsion force, he still kept charging forward while gritting his teeth.

As for the succubus, demon Ji Er Luo and the rookie Sword Devil, they were also closing in on Xue Ying at high speeds!

“Fix!” The distant red-robed female looked towards Xue Ying before casting her spell.

“Mn?” Xue Ying saw the world turning red in his eyes, as gigantic red lotuses bound him.

“Break!”

The Stellar Fire Cloud Spear arced at a terrifying degree, its momentum allowing the spearhead to pierce into the red lotus in front of Xue Ying. As soon as the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing’s might was displayed, the red lotus instantly collapsed.

“Everyone, please be careful. His defense is really great. Using only his body, he managed to withstand twelve of my attacks. From that I can be sure that his

defense is much stronger than any of ours! His power must also be very formidable, for he could resist the a peak grade Demigod rank spell scroll without having his physical body explode. I'm convinced his physical strength has reached a terrifying level," the handsome teenager transmitted to the others while simultaneously moving at great speed to a position above Xue Ying. His movements were accompanied by some sort of mystical undulation. He was the first to reach Xue Ying.

Ji Er Luo was the second!

Even though Xue Ying was fast, he had still been affected by the red lotus. Thus, he had not reached the plate before the two opponents reached him.

"Scram!" The spear fiercely whipped out as if its body was a lash, its movement like a star being flung.

"Mn?" The handsome teenager was wearing a pair of gloves that allowed him to block the attack by dissipating its force. One could see ripples concentrating on the surface of these gloves. As soon as he clashed with the spear, a terrifying force exploded outwards!

*Such incredible strength!* Even though he was expecting it, he was still shocked. The force caused him to fly backwards.

Xue Ying frowned. This handsome teenager was, indeed, his biggest enemy. After sweeping across with his spear, he was actually met with some sort of void-like, empty feeling in response.

"He is also a human and shouldn't have an undying body yet! As long as I can pierce through his head, he should die!" The handsome teenager who flew backwards took this chance to send a sound transmission to the others, "Get into close quarters and pierce his head!"

"Right," the others softly replied in a chorus of acknowledgement.

Demon Ji Er Luo slashed his claws towards Xue Ying while wearing a pair of claw-like weapons. A dazzling golden glow appeared on the surface of the five edges of his weapon. This golden light converged, causing a wild and ferocious power to accumulate. The moment the claws reached their target was also the moment this accumulated force exploded outwards.

*Pu!* Too fast. Even though Xue Ying was enveloped by large amounts of colourful lights—the representation of the True Meaning of Space Ripple’s suppression—the speed of this one spear stab was still shocking.

With its revolving force, the spearhead seemed like the most frightening single point under the heaven.

Extreme!

Piercing!

*Peng!* When demon Ji Er Luo met with this one stab, he finally understood how frightening the Extreme Piercing was! This single stab was enough to erase from his mind any other thought than this—*defend, defend against the attack!*

*Pu pu pu*, too fast!

Xue Ying consecutively struck three times more without pause. The first attack was enough to numb Ji Er Luo’s hands. The second one made him panic while doing his best to coordinate a defense. As for the third attack... it was not blocked. Instead, it pierced directly into his head! Even though Ji Er Luo’s body was tyrannical—it could withstand any ordinary rank five demon’s attack—right now, it had no way of resisting against the Extreme Piercing.

“Extreme Piercing is truly too fast!” The current scene made everyone tremble in their hearts.

When Extreme Piercing was used to pierce through the void, it would reach its target way before the space fluctuations arrive!

Even now, with the Extreme Piercing not being able to pierce through the void due to the arrays, its speed in the material world had not slowed down.

“Ji Er Luo, don’t fight head on with him!” transmitted the handsome teenager. At the same time, he flashed closer to Xue Ying, waving his hand to block the spear.

“Damn, I’ve been completely restrained by him!” Ji Er Luo gritted his teeth helplessly.

His True Meaning of Golden Brilliance was similarly an extremely berserk and fierce True Meaning! Having comprehended the True Meaning of Space Edge, he

wanted to fuse them together. What he chased after was that sort of explosive might! And Extreme Piercing was similarly powerful in its offense. When the two clashed...the Extreme Piercing's speed was on another level, gaining victory with just three such attacks!

The importance of defence was currently being emphasized. The handsome teenager, for example, had some formidable means of defending. Even though he was at a disadvantage, he could still tangle on and not lose in a few moves. "The descent of the Mirage!"

The succubus was the third to reach. Currently, her alluring eyes were akin to a maelstrom.

*Hua—*

Xue Ying was enveloped by a strand of disturbance.

"Mn?"

Xue Ying's expression changed slightly. Ji Er Luo, the handsome teenager and the others who were surrounding him disappeared into thin air.

Every single demon and the team of Temporal Temple disappeared.

*Fantasy? Xue Ying thought. You want to drag my mind into fantasy? In comparison with a Mirage... it's truly too simple!*

The True Meaning of Fantasy was a grade four True Meaning.

After it continued evolving, it would become a grade three True Meaning of Phantom World, and further on, it would finally reach the heaven-shaking grade two True Meaning of Mirage.

The True Meaning of Phantom World and True Meaning of Illusions were both grade three True Meanings.

Actually, they were good in different aspects.

The Phantom World primarily focused on the word 'World.' It was good at bringing the enemy's mind into a phantom world and leaving it eternally stuck within.

The True Meaning of Illusions had a greater focus on the word 'Illusions.' It

could generate images of oneself—for instance, a dozen Xue Yings—and at the same time, it enhanced one's combat power!

The two True Meanings represented different directions.

Xue Ying's own comprehension started with the Illusions. And currently, his embryonic form of the True Meaning of Mirage had also been trained to the peak. With a single step towards perfecting a small defect, he would finally be able to grasp hold of the complete True Meaning of Mirage. And what Xue Ying needed now the most was... the aspect of a Phantom World.

This demon's Fantasy was also an aspect belonging to the Phantom World and was a complete True Meaning of Fantasy! Xue Ying's eyes brightened as he finally discovered the missing piece.

And today, even though Xue Ying was unable to control the complete True Meaning of Mirage, he could still use a very basic form of it. Since Mirage was the final form of Fantasy, this simple Fantasy was like a joke to him.

.....

"His mind has been dragged into the Fantasy!" The handsome teenager saw Xue Ying's stunned action before celebrating. He then sent a sound transmission, "Everyone, take this opportunity of his soul struggling to escape from the Fantasy and kill him!"

"Dragged into Fantasy?"

"Our chance is here!"

Everyone was truly joyful.

Even though they held a strand of hope, they could not be too ambitious. After all, a heaven-shaking Transcendent who had grasped hold of such a powerful True Meaning was bound to have a very powerful spirit. Wanting to trap such a spirit inside a Fantasy was extremely difficult. But... who knew if Xue Ying actually had a weakness in terms of his spirit?

There was a saying—no True Meaning is unbeatable! Of course, the grade one True Meanings were excluded from this saying.

Grade one True Meanings signified perfection.



As for the others?

They had their distinct weaknesses! As long as there were weaknesses, they would be targeted upon. An expert dying because his spirit was lacking and had been trapped in a Fantasy wasn't such an impossible matter.

"Kill."

The black metal construct male immediately used the axe in his hands to hack across Xue Ying's waist. The True Meaning of Star easily defended against it by itself.

Xue Ying's conditioned reflex was to jab outwards with his spear!

As fast as lightning.

*Pu!*

It immediately pierced through that black metal construct male's chest, causing his powerful body to start shattering into pieces.

*Pu pu pu...* Xue Ying was sending attacks in all four directions in a panic. His spear danced about, sometimes stabbing out, and sometimes whipping out. Within moments, all of the surrounding directions were under his attacks. The black metal construct male's crumbling body floated away in the distance before recovering. He was covered in cold sweat.

"Your previous attack caused his body to be impacted," the handsome teenager Lie Huo furiously transmitted. "Everyone, be careful. Even though he is trapped in the Fantasy, his body and soul are still connected, so he can still feel his body being impacted. He should have realized his current straits of being trapped in the Fantasy. Even though he was just attacking all four directions in a panic, you all don't have to be so worried. He cannot see us. Basically, he's blind! We must make use of this opportunity and kill him before he escapes from the Fantasy."

.....

Xue Ying, who was seemingly sending attacks in all directions in a panic, was actually just faking it. He was currently studying this simple True Meaning of Fantasy. The attacks that were directed towards him were under his

observation! That black metal construct male was the weakest in terms of True Meaning. His combat power was the weakest, and Xue Ying could clearly see the level of the Laws of Profound Mysteries being imbued in his axe.

Like Si Kong Yang and Palace Head Chen in the past, when they first saw Xue Ying's embryonic form of Extreme Piercing, they could conclude that it was a grade two True Meaning embryonic form.

Similarly, with a single glance, Xue Ying could see that the black metal construct male grasped hold of a grade four True Meaning that had reached the stage two realm! Although he was physically stronger, his understanding of the Laws of Profound Mysteries was truly too weak. That was why Xue Ying deliberately received his attack. Of course, considering the defensive power of his True Meaning of Star, even a grade two True Meaning would not be able to easily break through!

*Hou hou hou~* Xue Ying had seemingly fallen into a panic and was 'frantically' attacking in all directions. But in truth, he was calmly observing his surroundings.

*Peng peng peng.*

His attacking randomly in every direction caused him to hit Ji Er Luo by coincidence!

"I understand." Xue Ying had a sudden epiphany. The True Meaning of Mirage had finally fallen under his control!

---

# Chapter 58 – True Meaning of Mirage

---

*Hua—*

Xue Ying could see through the essence of nature to discern that behind the real world... there was a corresponding mirage. They were like two scenes sharing a single source!

The Mirage represented the pinnacle of illusions.

Grasping hold of the True Meaning of Mirage represented the most crucial step Xue Ying had taken so far! After crossing over this gate, the True Meaning of Mirage could still be further improved through reaching the second stage realm, the third stage realm, and, ultimately, condensing a mirage-attributed True Deity Heart.

Even so, this first step of grasping hold of the True Meaning of Mirage would allow him to have a very frightening deterring power.

There was a certain saying in the Deity World which had spread since long ago about this True Meaning.

One would rather meet an enemy who had grasped hold of any other grade two True Meaning rather than the True Meaning of Mirage! The True Meaning of Mirage was weak in terms of its pure offensive capability, to the extent that it was even weaker than many of the grade three True Meanings! However, its ability to form an entire world signified the pinnacle of illusions, and it meant that the expert who controlled it could assassinate anyone!

Able to remain undiscovered when killing someone inside the mirage—such a saying was not exaggerated at all.

.....

The world surrounding Xue Ying's figure suddenly twisted. His body then disappeared from the real world as it entered the mirage.

Mirage.

It was akin to a mirror of the real world! It looked exactly the same, yet a single thought of Xue Ying's could change everything within.

*This is truly interesting.* Xue Ying walked alone in this boundless mirage. He approached the side of that black metal construct male and slapped his face. His palm then pierced through the Mirage into the real world as it slapped his face with a *pa*.

"Ah, it's an illusion technique, an illusion technique!"

The black metal construct male frantically attacked in every direction.

At that moment, everyone else, including the demons, had their minds dragged into the mirage controlled by Xue Ying. However, inside the mirage... anything Xue Ying wanted them to see, they would, and if he did not wish for them to see something, they would be unable to see it!

This metal race expert had even received a slap to the face before understanding that he had fallen under an illusion technique.

*I walk in the Mirage, yet I can attack the enemies in the real world, thought Xue Ying. Unless the enemies in the real world have a method to attack the Mirage, they will not be able to hurt me at all. This is truly a frightening technique! No wonder it's the pinnacle of illusions. Even a superpower will be helpless in front of it.*

Even someone with the power to destroy the heavens and exterminate the earth would not be able to hurt Xue Ying as long as they couldn't attack him inside the mirage.

The True Meaning of Mirage might have been weak in terms of its offensive capabilities.

But—

Xue Ying had his True Meaning of Extreme Piercing as well as his True Meaning of Star to go alongside it! These three great True Meanings would cover each

other's weaknesses, making him truly powerful.

*There's actually two of them who could escape the restriction on the mirage.* Xue Ying glanced at the distant handsome teenager and the red-robed female.

The red-robed female was an extremely powerful mage. Her comprehension of the realms was at a similar level to the handsome teenager's. But more importantly, she was a mage! Mages would usually be extremely formidable in aspects related to the soul and spirit, which meant it was quite natural for her to be able to break out of the Mirage.

However, the handsome teenager being able to break out of it... was completely out of Xue Ying's expectations!

Even though he had just grasped hold of the True Meaning of Mirage—it was still just at the first stage realm—and the control he had over binding others was rather weak, trying to break out of it was still extremely difficult.

*I shouldn't waste any more time!* Xue Ying continued walking in the mirage. He could control the Mirage Avatar into killing the others without having to act with his true body. This was something the experts who grasped hold of the True Meaning of Mirage would usually do, and also something that caused headaches for many enemies. Even if they could attack the mirage, unless they could find his or her true body, they would not be able to hurt the expert controlling the mirage.

But Xue Ying did not wish to waste any more time as the handsome teenager Lie Huo and the red-robed female had already regained their consciousnesses! Thus, the sooner he acted, the better it would be!

*Hu.*

With a single step, Xue Ying reached the side of the handsome teenager.

His spear struck out!

The Stellar Fire-Cloud Spear was as fast as lightning. It went out of the mirage before entering the real world. At the moment the spearhead appeared, it had reached the middle of his eyebrows!

*Pu!* The True Meaning of Extreme Piercing directly penetrated through the

protective layer of the True Meaning of Space Ripple! Even though this True Meaning could be considered fairly good in terms of its defense, it would naturally be unable to resist against a direct attack from Extreme Piercing.

.....

“This, this...” The handsome teenager Lie Huo was truly alarmed and frightened. It was fortunate that he had a treasure within his soul which allowed his mind to regain control of itself after being dragged into the mirage.

“They, they—” The handsome teenager looked around him. The distant succubus, black metal construct male, the rookie Sword Devil and the demons were all flying randomly. Some were just attacking empty space while others were attacking each others as if they were enemies.

“It’s fortunate that Hong Ye is awake as well.” The handsome teenager looked towards the red-robed female. The strongest two within their team were naturally the two of them.

噗！

*Pu!*

While he was still looking at the distant red-robed female, and before he even had the chance to think of anything else, a spearhead suddenly appeared and pierced through the point between his eyebrows and into his forehead!

His eyes were wide open.

This, this... did he just die?

.....

He could still tangle with Xue Ying when he just had the True Meaning of Star and the Extreme Piercing. But now Xue Ying had also grasped hold of the True Meaning of Mirage, the pinnacle of illusions and the ultimate assassination technique; these three great True Meaning had caused him to die in a single move!

He was, after all, still a human and did not have an undying body. One must know that even most of the Demigods of the Xia Clan did not have an undying body! For someone to attain it, they had to possess the innate talents like the

demons or the primordial beings. If not, one could continue consuming one million kilograms of Origin Stones after the first awakening of their Primordial Bloodline to raise their fleshy body to the mid stage Saint realm before an undying body would take shape! Other than that... there was one more special circumstance which involved comprehending a True Meaning that led to an undying body after-effect.

Space Ripple naturally did not have the effect of allowing the user to have an undying body.

The True Meaning of Space Ripple was quite good in terms of its defense and could withstand the True Meaning of Gravity and the others.

But against the purely offensive-oriented Extreme Piercing, he would just die on the spot as it pierced through his brains!

.....

The red-robed female, Hong Ye, was also astonished. “Such a terrifying illusion technique. I’ve cultivated my soul and my spirit for a long time, and yet, I had to use all of my strength before struggling out.”

Those present on the scene were randomly flying about. Some were attacking into empty space while others were killing each other. Clearly, they were still trapped in the domain of the illusion.

“Lie Huo is conscious too.” Hong Ye looked towards the distant handsome teenager.

Suddenly—

She stared in shock as a spearhead appeared from thin air in a position just in front of the central point between the handsome teenager’s eyebrows! After that, a *pu* could be heard as it pierced through his protective True Meaning layer before entering his brain. Their outstanding leader, Lie Huo, had died!

At the same time, a message was transmitted into the minds of the red-robed female, the black metal construct male, and the rookie Sword Devil!

“The difficulty of the mission has increased!”

“The difficulty of the mission has increased!”

“An accident occurred. The current mission’s difficulty has been increased to nightmare rank!”

As they proceeded through the millions and millions of worlds to train, the members of the Temporal Temple understood a single rule—never, ever, be reckless. Never consider any mission ordinary. After all, a mistake of provoking a terrifying existence would cause the difficulty of the mission to suddenly explode! And with the difficulty of the mission exploding, should they succeed in finishing it, their rewards would similarly increase. But if they failed, it would just be a pity!

Thus, risking their lives during moments when they had some certainty of completing the mission for the sake of earning some treasure was alright. But if they had no certainty of completing it, the difficulty explosion would just strangle their lives away.

Nightmare rank?

Previously, this mission had a difficulty rank of just hard. Under normal circumstances, more than half of the members would survive! As for missions of the difficulty higher than it, hell rank, one would survive out of ten! But there was still another difficulty that was even higher—nightmare rank!

In nightmare rank missions, there would be no survivors!

---



## Chapter 59 – No Survivors

---

“How could this be? Nightmare rank?”

“We’re doomed!”

“I was just recently chosen as a member of the Temporal Temple, and yet the very first mission I must undertake is of the nightmare rank? This, this... isn’t this playing with my life?” The rookie Sword Devil felt sullen. He hadn’t gotten any chance to display his combat power ever since the battle started, and now the difficulty of the mission had been bumped to nightmare rank.

The Temporal Temple would usually assign missions of hell rank at the most, as they had at least a small chance of being completed! As for nightmare rank missions... they would only appear because of some unforeseen circumstances!

“Nightmare rank... It’s actually a nightmare rank mission!” Seeing the distant handsome teenager being pierced through his forehead, the red-robed female felt a chill deep in her heart. Without any hesitation, she took out a red paper talisman which allowed spirit energy to pervade into the space time trace inside her arm. “Forfeit, I forfeit this mission! Immediately return! Immediately return!”

*Weng!*

A mysterious, vast undulation in spacetime descended and enveloped the red-robed female.

“Mn?”

The black-robed youngster who walked out from the mirage was none other than Xue Ying. He frowned at the red-robed female being enveloped by the spacetime undulation in front of him.

“Dong Bo Xue Ying, I’ll remember you! I hope we will meet again in the Deity

World!” The red-robed female’s mouth moved, yet no sound could be transmitted outwards. Her eyes were filled with unwillingness. The price of that red paper talisman was truly terrifying. She had traded for it with a Deity treasure received from her teacher. This type of talisman allowed her to forfeit and leave any mission halfway through, as long as she had not yet entered the Demigod realm!

Thus, this paper represented another life.

She could still bear paying the price of giving up the mission..

But if she was to be killed... it would be too terrifying. Her soul would be pulled by the Temporal Temple into hell before forcing her to consecutively tackle three hell ranked missions!

She was the only one in the team to own a red paper talisman of that kind! In fact, it was rarely seen even among the Saint ranked Reincarnators.

.....

“So interesting.” Xue Ying walked out of the mirage into the real world to look at what was happening.

Time and space were vibrating continuously. If it willed so, this power could definitely destroy the entire world of the Xia Clan!

Too large, too powerful.

According to the records, the Temporal Temple was backed by a truly terrifying existence who, along with several others, stood at the pinnacle of the millions and millions of worlds, the Deity World and the Dark Abyss! For the sake of operating the Temporal Temple, he had paid a huge price to cultivate an unimaginably terrifying Deity treasure. This treasure had its own spirit that would follow the orders set by its owner when it was created. For instance, it could select several existences from the countless worlds to become Reincarnators, give them missions, train them while filtering out the strong, and give them huge amounts of resources... it would continuously groom experts for the Temporal Temple.

“I heard long ago that the members of Temporal Temple could walk among countless worlds. However, this is the first time I hear of the Temporal Temple

using its power to bring them back.” Xue Ying smiled at the scene.

*Hua.*

The red-robed female in front of him had been swept away, piercing through and leaving the mortal world.

Xue Ying did not even attempt to attack. The difference was too great. Maybe there were some great existences in the Deity World who could go against this terrifying Deity Treasure, but for a Transcendent like him to do so? Impossible!

*Pu!*

Xue Ying continued walking and suddenly disappeared once again into the mirage.

While walking within the mirage, he would casually tap with his finger.

A strand of fiery Transcendent Qi emerged, flying towards the rookie Sword Devil before emerging from the mirage into reality. The Qi strengthened by the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing appeared at the rookie Sword Devil’s side and then pierced through his head. As soon as his head was pierced, his body began suffering from the effects of True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, causing it to crumble apart.

However, the body then moved as fast as lightning as it started regaining its form.

*Undying body?* Xue Ying was rather surprised. *A human Saint could actually train an undying body?*

*Xiu xiu xiu...*

Xue Ying only remained surprised for a moment. He then casually shot out strand after strand of Transcendent Qi towards his targets: the succubus, the metal race male, the rookie Sword Devil, Demon Ji Er Luo and the many other demons.

Although the rookie Sword Devil was human and the black metal male was an existence belonging to the metal race, the others were all demons!

“Spare my life, spare my life!” The black metal construct male had long become intimidated by the nightmare difficulty. His soul was shouting out, “I

don't dare become an enemy of this great sir, spare my life!"

"Great sir Dong Bo Xue Ying, spare my life, I've been forced into this mission." The succubus's body had tried its utmost to repair itself after breaking apart. Her soul was also begging for forgiveness, "As long as this great sir spares my life, I'll do anything for you! I'm a succubus, the most knowledgeable race in serving others. I'm willing to become your slave!"

As long as the allotted time for the mission was reached, they would be forcibly taken away.

Thus, any promises they made would not matter as long as they survived!

They were not willing to die. After all, upon death, they would be forced to take three consecutive hell rank missions which they had to succeed in completing. A single failure meant their souls would dissipate away.

*Xiu xiu xiu!* More strands of Transcendent Qi flew towards the different targets. Xue Ying stared coldly at them.

Spare their lives?

The demons were slaughtering the mortals with impunity. Who would spare their lives?

These Temporal Temple Reincarnators had unhesitantly attacked him. Who would spare his life should he lose?

Those who dared to attack him would have to face the consequences!

*Extreme Piercing...* Xue Ying himself was shocked at his attacks. *Its offensive power is truly too powerful! Had I used my True Meaning of Star to attack, I'm afraid that I would have needed more than a thousand attacks to kill them.*

The True Meaning of Star's might was also great. It could directly suppress his opponents, but it would merely cause the flesh and blood of their bodies to crumble apart as opposed to destroying them at the atomic level.

Destruction at the atomic level was something an undying body had a hard time recovering from. As long as it was destroyed about eight to ten times consecutively, their whole life force would be used up.

"Human, let's fight face to face if you dare!" Ji Er Luo's body was trying its best

to repair itself as his soul snarled at Xue Ying. It was a pity that Xue Ying could not care less about him, nor would he waste his time.

Finally.

The demons as well as the succubus, the black metal race man and the rookie Sword Devil had all returned to nothingness.

All of them died.

Xue Ying looked towards the emptiness surrounding him, spotting the large amounts of treasure dropping from mid-air. These were the goods left behind by the demons and the Reincarnators. Under the True Meaning of Extreme Piercing, some of the weaker treasures had already been disintegrated into various sorts of Transcendent materials.

“It has finally ended.” Xue Ying stood in the mirage looking at the scene ahead of him. He felt somewhat relaxed.

He had finished his mission of raiding the demon bases. Even though there were two other demon bases which he had not raided, the Demon Generals would have already received the tip and recalled the remaining teams!

*Weng~*

A undulation in spacetime swept the souls of the succubus and the other two, sending them into the distant Abyss Hell to experience the cruel hell rank missions.

Following that, a fluctuating strand reached Xue Ying.

“Transcendent Dong Bo Xue Ying of the Xia Clan. The Temporal Temple invites you to join us. Are you willing to do so?” This fluctuation was followed by a vigorous sound which felt indifferent to all of existence as if it was standing at the apex.

---

# Chapter 60 – I Disagree

---

*The Temporal Temple is inviting me to join them?*

Xue Ying laughed. The Temporal Temple truly had too large of a reputation. Whether it was through the information passed down by the Xia Clan's ancestors, the Bloodshed Tavern or the Temple.

Like how the Temporal Temple took advantage of their control over time and space to investigate any past events amongst the millions of worlds.

Of course, as there were so many worlds, and because the Deity World and the Dark Abyss were so large, the Temporal Temple would have to search each specific region to find out what happened there. Otherwise, not even they could know what had occurred.

Still!

The Temporal Temple remained the best at learning the combat powers of the various Transcendents. They could look through the millions upon millions of worlds and pick out the truly talented ones! As such, had they been given the chance to just forcibly grab all of them away, the Temporal Temple would have become the sole most powerful organisation long ago. Therefore, as the superpowers of the Deity World and the Dark Abyss were not willing to let such a thing happen, they reached an agreement with the Temporal Temple.

They set a limit to the number of Transcendents they could grab every year!

How many mortals and Transcendents could they grab?

Even the number of Transcendents with lower and middle grade True Meanings they could grab was limited! Those with high grade True Meanings... they could be taken away, but the maximum number was extremely low!

As for the ones with grade two True Meanings or with the rarest grade one True Meanings—the Temporal Temple could not take them away by force! They had to receive their agreement first!

*Invite me?* Xue Ying snickered in his heart.

The Temporal Temple wasn't that polite. Rather, the rules made it so that they had to invite him! Had they been able to simply grab him, they would have already done so. What a joke. Even with how poor and destitute the Xia Clan World was, he had managed to grasp hold of three different grade two True Meanings, and at such a young age too! Under the all out grooming and training of the Temporal Temple, he would even have a chance of fusing them into a grade one True Meaning.

The grade one True Meanings represented the core essences of the Laws of Profound Mysteries. Given how terrifying Xue Ying's current combat power already was, it would become truly heaven shaking if he could acquire a grade one True Meaning!

"I apologize, but I decline your offer!" Xue Ying replied.

"Decline? Are you afraid that the missions assigned to you by my Temporal Temple will be too dangerous?" the apathetic voice calmly said. "You can rest easy. My Temporal Temple would not let people with a potential as great as yours die so easily. I can instantly promote you to a Silver Order Deity Emissary, giving you plenty of power! Your chances of death would also be reduced to a very low percent!"

Xue Ying laughed.

He had long understood this—the Temporal Temple had a vastly different treatment towards the Transcendents they would take away forcibly and those they had they had to personally invite.

"My decision to decline still stands," continued Xue Ying. "I have no reason to join the Temporal Temple."

"In that case, I can immediately promote you to a Gold Order Deity Emissary! That is the highest level of grooming which is granted only to Transcendents who have grasped hold of a grade one True Meaning!" The apathetic voice continued,

“My Temporal Temple has plenty of experts and unlimited treasures and resources. Since you’ve grasped hold of three different grade two True Meanings at such a young age, we could help you fuse them into a grade one True Meaning.”

“Furthermore, you don’t have to worry about dying. Not only will my Temporal Temple protect you to the best of our abilities, even if you die, your soul will be under our care while it returns and your body will be reconstructed.”

Gold Order Deity Emissary.

That represented... the highest level treatment!

If one’s physical body perished, their soul would be protected, and they would eventually reincarnate! They had no choice but to do so. All of the superpowers at the apex of the Deity World would protect the exceptional Transcendents with grade one True Meanings, and the Temporal Temple was no exception. How could they take the initiative to just send them to their deaths? If Xue Ying

Even though Xue Ying did not grasp hold of a grade one True Meaning!

But the three different True Meanings of Extreme Piercing, Star, and Mirage he had could supplement each other! An expert who had grasped hold of three different True Meanings of the

Xue Ying grasped hold of True Meanings from three different categories. The True Meaning of Mirage was especially difficult to comprehend, but experts who grasped hold of it became natural assassins... albeit their offensive ability was weaker. But Xue Ying had the ultra offensive Extreme Piercing to match with it, while the True Meaning of Star provided him with formidable survivability. All of these considered, Xue Ying could be considered a lesser paragon comparable to an expert with a grade one True Meaning!

Even if he wouldn’t grasp hold of a grade one True Meaning in the future, he would still be qualified to be a Gold Order Deity Emissary.

Most importantly!

He had yet to undergo a lot of training under life or death conditions! And he not been groomed maniacally! On top of that, he was still quite young! All of these led to Xue Ying’s potential being regarded very highly.



The handsome teenager who had died previously, Lie Huo, for example, had merely grasped hold of a single grade three True Meaning when he was taken away! Only after experiencing large amounts of grooming and training did he finally grasp hold of the four different grade three True Meanings which he fused into the grade two True Meaning of Space Ripple! In other words, the potential of Lie Huo had been nearly squeezed dry. He had become numb to life or death situations!

That was right, numb!

The terror brought along by life or death situations would allow the fundamental life within the Transcendents to surge! However, upon being exposed to too much of these situations, one would become numb. At that point, the effect of these life or death training sessions would decrease drastically—the potential of the Transcended would have now been squeezed dry. Although the Xia Clan would view a Transcendent with a grade two True Meaning of Space Ripple as extremely precious, a superpower sitting at the apex of the Deity World like the Temporal Temple would rather continue squeezing their potential and look to improve them.

Even a large number of helpers would be of limited help if they were all weak.

Only with the emergence of a powerful expert would the overall power of the Temporal Temple increase!

“Gold Order Deity Emissary?” Xue Ying shook his head and laughed. “According to my knowledge, there are some powerful existences in the Deity World that could kill me even if I’m under your protection.”

“Right,” the apathetic voice calmly replied. “After all, I’m just a Deity treasure, although powerful. I can protect you only in the void layers in-between space! Thus, I am unable to block attacks from the powerful existences of the Deity World, and I can at best try to prevent such things from happening.”

“Still, I must decline,” replied Xue Ying.

“Are you afraid of death?” asked the apathetic voice.

“No,” replied Xue Ying.

“Freedom, then?” the apathetic voice continued questioning. “I can even give

you the chance to select certain missions. You may head to the world you wish to visit and experience so many different things you would have never thought of. Your combat power would also rise as you broaden your horizons! You are destined not to stay in this tiny mortal world, but to visit the vast, endless world out there!”

“What I need is not only freedom, but also time!” answered Xue Ying.

“Time?” the apathetic voice questioned back.

“If, for instance, I would want to not take on any missions for the next 1,000 years and remain in my hometown... would you allow me to do so without forcing me?”

“That’s impossible! You are still young right now, only a few dozens of years old. This is the most crucial point of your development, and the best chance for you to evolve your True Meanings into a grade one True Meaning!” denied the apathetic voice. “The earlier you are in your cultivation, the more important it is to spend your time on cultivation, without wasting any moment! The moment you become an important existence in the Deity World, spending a million years leisurely will no longer be a big deal. But at this moment, you must treasure every single year! My Temporal Temple has these rules set down for the grooming of our members. Even the special privileges of being a Gold Order Deity Emissary would not allow you to bypass these most fundamental rules!”

Xue Ying shook his head. “In that case, my decision does not change.”

.....

After cleaning up the battlefield of the treasures left by the dead Reincarnators and demons, he finally tore apart the layer of space membrane.

*Hua—*

Xue Ying stepped out. Soon, several figures came flying over from different directions—Faction Head Si Kong Yang, City Lord By, Mountain Lord He, Chi Qiu Bai, a scarlet gowned Xi Yun and the Vice Lord of Cloud City, a fat person who looked like a merchant, called Chun Yuan.

“Solved the issue?” Chi Qiu Bai asked.

“It’s solved. None remain alive,” replied Xue Ying.

“How were you discovered this time? Did any unforeseen circumstances crop up?” Si Kong Yang still remained suspicious.

“It was the Temporal Temple.” Xue Ying felt helpless. “I truly wouldn’t have thought during this attack on the demon base, the Temporal Temple would send some of their members over for training.”

“Haha, I’d heard of the Temporal Temple’s reputation long ago, but even after living for a thousand years, I have yet to meet any of their members.” Chun Yuan was beaming.

City Lord Bu also gave Xue Ying a smile.

Although her domineering temperament was unusual, she truly was beautiful! Currently, the corners of her lips quirked upwards as she was giving Xue Ying a big smile.

Everyone currently at the scene was feeling pleasant. They all sent Xue Ying different looks.

“Dong Bo, you must know that your actions have saved half of our Xia Clan’s Transcendents!” Xi Yun said.

“The meritorious service you have done this time was extremely important,” Mountain Lord He praised him as well.

“News of this have already started circulating around. I trust that in a short while, every Transcendent of my Xia Clan will know what you have accomplished,” commented Chi Qiu Bai. “Soon, every single Transcendent will be grateful to you! Haha, your communication wristband will surely overflow with messages.”

“What happened to the other two demon bases?” asked Xue Ying.

“We had sent Demigods over to try surrounding them. However, when the demons retreated, they all took on different routes of escape. Whether fortunate or unfortunate, we managed to kill only two of the escaping demons, without even getting to see the rest,” explained Chi Qiu Bai.

Xue Ying did not feel shocked. This was entirely within his expectations.

.....

After bidding farewell to the Demigods, Xue Ying rushed back to his hometown.

“Disciple brother Xue Ying, you have comprehended a grade two True Meaning? So formidable, haha, truly admirable!”

“Disciple brother Xue Ying, I am Zhuo Yi! To have managed to comprehend a grade two True Meaning, you are truly too formidable! You even saved so many of the Transcendents of our Xia Clan. Those who I admire number few, yet you are currently the frontrunner among them. Truly amazing.”

“Little brother Xue Ying, you have eradicated three demon bases? Truly amazing! One of these days, I’ll visit your Snowrock mountain to drink. You mustn’t turn your back on this big sister.”

Xue Ying had already started receiving chains of messages from the Transcendents.

*Hu.*

He appeared in the space above Snowrock Mountain. With a gaze, he spotted a woman standing atop the roof of the main building of Snowrock Castle, her green robe fluttering in the wind.

Why did he reject the Temporal Temple?

That was because what he chased after was quite different from the others.

Maybe the other Transcendents sought to improve their combat power in hope of one day becoming a Deity.

But he was different. He only wanted to protect the dear people he loved. The woman in front of him, his little brother, his father, his mother... he would give his life to protect any of them if needed!

Cultivation was important to him, but in front of his loved ones, it held no worth! The cultivation he had done was merely for the sake of getting the strength needed to protect everything he loved.

If he wasted a long time risking his life to train in the millions upon millions of worlds while chasing after this supposed increase in combat power, while at the

same time leaving his family behind... at that point his values would have totally inverted! Even if he were to become a very powerful existence after a few tens of thousand of years, without his family around, he would then simply be a lone ranger. So what if he was powerful?

Even with such great combat power, he would still be just a lonely person.

Also!

Did it matter that he had to spend his time with his family in the mortal world? He could strengthen himself just the same. Had that not been the case also when he grasped hold of the three different grade two True Meanings?

“Jing Qiu.” Xue Ying descended.

Jing Qiu’s eyes were covered in sparkling, translucent tears. The news had been spreading among the Transcendents, so she understood what had happened. Although Xue Ying looked well to her eyes, a burst of lingering fear still filled her when she thought of how Xue Ying had risked his life to attack the demon bases.

She leapt into Xue Ying’s embrace and hugged him tightly, stunning him momentarily. He could sense the feelings inside Jing Qiu, and he smiled, a warm feeling inside him.

This, this was truly what he would sacrifice his life for!

---

**Publisher:**

---

**TooLate**

**From doswap**

